

Her heart- My story

Intro..

.

Name: Mbali'entle Siphosethu Seti

Age: 24

I am Xhosa girl born and bred in Queenstown. I grew up with my mother as an only child. My dad left us the minute he found out my mother was pregnant. But my mother never gave up despite the circumstances. She worked as a nurse at a local clinic then later worked at a private hospital. I never really needed anything as a kid, I had everything except for a father's love.

I went to Queenstown Girls High and completed my studies there then of course went to university(Univ

ersity of Fort Hare, East London). Studied HR and graduated. Just got a stable job and I'm

enjoying it.

I have had bad experience with relationships and my last one ended badly because of distance. We'd been together since high school and my mom warned me about him and I never listened till he did the same thing my father did. Left me when I told him I was pregnant. My baby was the only good thing I got out of my relationship. Enzokuhle, she's 2 now and staying with my mom in Queenstown because I just got my life together..

Characters...

My mom(MaMfene)

Enzo

Sibabalwe(My best friend)

Siya(baby daddy)

Buhle(a friend)

[05/14, 11:49] Mk: Insert 1

.

.

My mom shook me as she woke me up from a very long night.

Mom: Mbali vuka!

Me: 5 more minutes.

Mom: Mbali'entle Siphosethu Seti vuka.

I smile and got up to check the time. It was only 9 and I was still drowsy because we had just arrived at 4 from the Cross over(31st December to 1st January prayer).

Me: you can go now.

She smiled the walked out. I woke my baby up and she smiled the minute she saw me.

Me: baby

Enzo: baba

She looked so cute. I picked her up and we walked to the bathroom to brush our teeth then

we headed to the kitchen for breakfast.

Mom: when are you leaving?

Me: later on today.

Her face immediately changed. I know I could stay longer but I needed to go rest a little before work.

Mom: yi 1st namhlanje Mbali.

Me: I know ma. But I need to prepare a few stuff before work.

I knew this didn't sit well with her even though I've been here for like 3 weeks now. I missed living alone and my friends too.

Me: ok fine ndizo hamba Friday.

It was Tuesday today. She smiled a bit.

We had breakfast then after breakfast I went to take a bath with Enzo then we got dressed in shorts and white shirts.

Mom: niyaphi?

Me: no where.

We walked to the lounge then just watched tv the whole day. I decided to call Siba and tell her I wouldn't be returning any time soon.

Siba: sthandwa.

Me: hey. How are you?

Siba: good. How far are you?

Me: ah ndizo buya Friday.

Siba: yho 3 days yonke.

Me: I'm sorry love.

Siba: it's fine. I just have to be strong then.

Me: yep. Sela amanzi ane cement uxole.

She laughed.

Siba: I love you vha?

Me: I love you too muchkin.

We hung up then there was a knock and my mom looked at.

Me: expecting someone?

Mom: no

I got up and went to open and to my surprise it was Siya(the baby daddy). I know how my mom can be around him so I got out and we stood outside.

Siya: hi

Me: hi

Siya: uh happy new year by the way.

Me: thanks. Happy new year to you too.

He just smiled.

I had been with Siya since grade 11(17 years) till I was 20 and that was 4 years. He meant the world to me and we had dreams. Even though we were in different universities we still made time for each other. I trusted him with everything in me but he played me just like everybody else.

Siya: ndizobona uEnzo.

Even though he had left me when I told him about my pregnancy, he was present in his child's life. He made an effort to see her as many times as possible. Helps with her needs, education, clothes, nanny fees and what not.

Me: uh ok

Siya: I'll bring her back before 6. My parents want to see her.

I nodded then walked inside.

Me: uh mama uSiya ufuna uEnzo.

Mom: uyamfuna?

Me: he didn't say it like that but he wants to spend time with her.

Mom: ndithule vha Mbali. Do as you please.
Ngumntana wenu kakade.

I knew she had a lot more to say but since Enzo was around she kept some stuff to her self. I

went to pack a bag for Enzo then waya ku tatakhe.

Enzo:tata!!

She was so excited to see him.

Siya: baba wam.

He took her into his arms.

Siya: I promise I'll bring her back.

I nodded then walked back inside. My mom was still angry. I know she hates Siya but I can't use his daughter against him.

Mom: you know what I hate? The fact that he has the nerve to come to my house after everything he's done to you and you just choose to forget everything and play happy families.

Me: I'm not playing happy families. Ngu mntana wakhe naye. He has every right to see her.

Mom: ok Mbali. You're the adult here and you know everything.

She walked to her bedroom and closed the door. I stayed in the lounge just hoping I had left. My mom can be so unfair at times.

At 5 I decided to start on supper as it was getting late and my mom was still locked in her room. Nyani at 6 I heard my daughter's laughter outside and I opened before they knocked.

She came running to me and I picked her up.

Siya: thanks. We had a good day.

I nodded.

Siya: uhamba nini?

Me: Friday.

Siya: oh I hope I see you again before you leave.

I just smiled.

He leaned over to kiss my forehead then Enzo's cheek. I don't know how stupid I can be but I just thought there was still hope for us. He gave me hope that we could still work out and thats

what made my mom angry.

I got inside then closed the door.

Enzo: uphi ukhulu?

Me: use roomini yakhe.

Enzo: ok bye.

She ran to her room and I carried on cooking. At 7 I dished out and served the family. We ate in the lounge while watching the news. I fed Enzo whilst eating...

[05/14, 11:49] Mk: Insert 2

.

.

I later washed the dishes then went to bed with my daughter. She kept telling me about the day she had with her dad and I was glad she enjoyed herself.

.

On Friday morning I woke up and took a bath

then wore skinny jeans and a vest. I went to wake Enzo up then bathed her. She was so quiet and I knew she knew I was leaving.

Enzo: uya hamba?

Me: ewe baby. But ndizo buya.

Enzo: ngomso?

I hated leaving her behind but I had to, because of work.

Me: ewe.

She smiled.

I dressed her in her pink jumpsuit.

We walked to the lounge and I poured cereal for the both of us then we went to sit in the lounge. My mom was already there.

Me: molo.

Mom: molo. Uhamba kwa early na?

Me: I have work on Monday nje.

Mom: une weekend yonke nje.

Me: oh hayi mama. Don't try to change my mind again. Plus uzobuya u sisi ngomso.

Mom: ok.

We had breakfast then I washed the dishes and went to fetch my bags and packed them in the car. Yep, the first thing I did when I got a job, I got myself a car. A navy Ford Fiesta.

Mom: so this is it.

She came to hug me and Enzo cried.

Mom: uzobuya umama.

She nodded and I kissed her then drove off. I hated seeing her like that. I drove to town and bought a few snacks for the road then filled up my tank then drove to East London all alone.

I arrived at like 1 then unpacked everything there was to unpack. I rented an apartment in Beacon Bay. It was closer to worker and safer too.

The fridge was empty so I took my car keys and drove to Retail Park to buy a few groceries then I called my mom.

Me: mama ka Mbali.

Mom: sweetheart. Ufikile?

Me: ewe I'm just buying groceries.

Mom: ohh. How's that side so far?

Me: perfect.

Mom: mhh. Uza nini ngapha?

Me: haibo mama I just left.

She giggled.

Me: khawu nike uEnzo.

There was a shuffle then an argument.

Mom: yho haike sana akafuni. Usa qumbile.

I let out a sigh.

Me: ok.

We hung up then I drove back home and

unpacked everything. I wanted to take a nap but before that I needed to call Siba and tell her I had arrived.

Me: my chocolate butterfly munchkin.

She laughed.

Siba: friend ubanxekile. What the hell is that?

Me: that is you.

Siba: uphi, I've got plans for us.

Me: my place. I was thinking of taking a nap though.

Siba: ok lala but I'll be there at 7. Buhle is also coming with.

Me: ok siyaphi?

Siba: you ask too many questions.

She hung up before I could say anything more. I smiled to myself then went to my bedroom and took a nap. I woke up at 5 then took a shower by the time ndiqiba my girls were already

knocking. I went to open with my towel wrapped around.

Buhle: if I didn't know better I'd say kukho umntu omfihle apha.

Me: I was in the shower xolweni.

Siba: nxiba nxiba, i guys zam zilindile.

Me: I knew ine guys le plan yakho.

They laughed.

Ok Siba was a bit shorter than me, a bit chubby but she calls herself thick. Curves for days. Not too light, big eyes and dimples. She's your size 36 to 38 type of girls.

And on the other hand Buhle was skinny, curvy as well. Your model type of height. Size 30 and 32. Yellow bone with small brown eyes.

Me being the short or middle sized girl. Not too thick just right. Not too light as well and not too dark either. Size 32 or 34. Thats me. Round brown eyes.

They were already dressed.

Siba: ntombazana yakwa Seti hambo nxiba.

I laughed then walked to my bedroom. Since she mentioned guys I decided to wear my black high waisted jean and a white crop top and white sneakers.

Siba: mama ka Enzo nje.

I smiled. We took a couple of pictures then left. We were using my car so I drove to this house in Vincent and that's where the pool party was happening. It was already packed when we got there so I found a spot to park then we walked in. I swear I nearly fainted when I saw Siya there too. He often visited EL and I knew he had friends this side but I wasn't expecting to see him.

Siba: iyhoo.

He came over to us and hugged me.

Siya: wanna come meet my friends?

Me: ah Siya. I came here with my friends.

Siya: oh sorry.

He kissed my cheek then walked over to his friends.

Buhle: ithini na lento?

Me: I'm so lost.

We laughed then walked over to where the booze was and we started the night with a few shots. Then I got my red wine.

Buhle left with this other girl kwashyeka mna no Siba.

Siba: I feel like ndizoku shiya.

Me: you're so mean.

Siba: you know when we start off the night with shots it awakes the hoeness inside us.

I laughed. She walked away and I just went to sit outside all alone. Then Siya walked over to me.

Siya: you still love your red wine?

I smiled then nodded.

Siya: I miss you yazi.

There he goes again, giving me false hope.

Me: we've been down this road before Siya and it didn't work.

Siya: I'm serious. I got a transfer to this side and I want us to work on things.

See, I still loved him and I doubt I'll ever stop. He made a fool out of me twice but I still had the same amount of love for him. He made me believe that he only cheated because of the distance and I believed him. He stayed in Port Elizabeth and I was in East London so I understood where he came from.

Me: and why are you only telling me this now?

Siya: I was going to call you and tell you this but since you're here, I just thought why not.

Me: ohh.

Siya: so what do you say? Wanna give us another shot?

Me: it's not that easy, I need to think about it.

He nodded.

Siya: I'll give you all the time you need.

He seemed like he had changed. Only judging by the way he spoke lately. He sounded so sincere.

We then spoke about everything nje, from our daughter to the party to work then later I called my friends and we left. It was already 3 in the morning.

Siba: so what's happening kuwe no Siya?

Buhle: and you guys were so cosy.

Me: nothing. We're just parents to Enzo.

Buhle: I know that lie.

Me: I'm serious.

Siba: you're blushing.

I laughed. We finally arrived at my place. They were going to sleep over.

Buhle: are you guys back together?

Me: not yet.

Siba: so it's going to happen?

Me: nizo bona.

I didn't want to seem naive and agree to everything he said. He knows how I feel about him and he always uses that to his advantage.

I drank water then changed to pjs. And we all went to bed...

[05/14, 11:49] Mk: Her heart- My story

Insert 3

.

.

I woke up on Saturday morning and went to

make breakfast for my babies. Bacon, cheese grillers, eggs, mushrooms and toast. I know it was too much but I loved them too much for them to starve. My phone rang and it was Siya.

Me: hello.

Siya: morning sunshine, unjani?

Me: I'm all good you?

Siya: good too. How's the hangover?

Me: none of that.

Siya: mhh. Meet me this afternoon.

Me: is that an order?

Siya: no ndiyaku cela.

Me: ok ke. Tell me when and where.

Siya: will send you the details.

Me: sure.

I hung up and the girls walked in.

Buhle: I feel like sithandiwe.

Me: always nje.

We had breakfast while having a random conversation about everything.

Siba: so like ndinomntu omthsa.

Buhle: I knew la guy ibine njongo.

I laughed.

Siba: no man. I don't do relationships. Source of income leya qha.

We laughed. Siba really wasn't a relationship type of girl. She once had a serious relationship qha wadikwa. Apparently the guy became boring.

Me: zange wathini ke wena.

Buhle: nam I need that. Noba ngo minister abay 3.

My friends were crazy kodwa. After breakfast they washed the dishes and I went to take a bath and wore high waisted shorts and a crop

top and my white all star.

Siba: uyaphi wena?

Me: ndi godusa nina tshi.

Buhle: it's even 1 yet.

Me: ndifuna ulala mna.

They took their stuff and I drove them home. Siba stayed in Southernwood and Buhle in Amalinda. They also stayed in flats. Buhle wanted us to stay together but I couldn't really stand Siba's blessers and my mom would just show up so I needed my won space.

After dropping them off I drove to Ocean Basket in Vincent Park. That's where we'd be meeting with Siya. I arrived and he was already waiting. He smiled then waved when he saw me. I walked over to him and we hugged.

Me: sorry for keeping you waiting.

Siya: it's fine.

I ordered prawns and calamari and he went for sushi, it's always been his favourite.

Me: so when are you moving this side?

Siya: I'm here now. I'm just waiting for courier to bring my stuff.

Me: mhh.

Siya: wanna taste?

I shook my head.

Siya: come on its just fish.

Me: it's raw.

Siya: ok mamela neh. Let's pretend that you had to eat it in order for Enzo to survive.

I looked at him then burst into laughter. He was so serious.

Me: I'd probably let her die.

Siya: ouch! Waste ye sperm sam.

We laughed and most of the people looked at

us.

Me: ok ke let me taste.

I opened my mouth and he fed me. It wasn't as bad as I thought it was.

Me: it's not so bad.

Siya: I told you.

Me: mxm

We had spoke about everything then later left. He had my hand in his.

Siya: kanene you've got your own car.

Me: yeah.

Siya: mhh.

He pulled me in for the longest hug ever. He finally pulled away and I kissed my forehead.

Siya: I love you ok?

I nodded.

I wanted to give him another chance and this

was probably going to be the last.

Me: uhm Siya I wanna give us another chance.

He smiled.

Siya: nyani?

Me: ewe.

He kissed me so many times.

I finally left and drove back home. I cooked supper then called my baby. And this time she agreed to talk to me. We had a very long convo about everything then I finally hung up. Had my supper than ndayo lala.

The next day I woke up and went to church then obviously had lunch with Siya. He was still staying at his friends place. So he'd be visiting me often. I wouldn't really want to be around his friends all the time. So it would only make sense if he came over.

I decided to tell Siba about it kwa ngoku kuse early.

Siba: yho.

Me: what?

Siba: lomntu made a fool out of you twice and you still give him a chance.

Me: ndiyamthanda Siba and he's my baby daddy.

Siba: yho. I'm not ine to judge. If he makes you happy then I'm happy for you. If he breaks your heart again, I'll be here for you.

Me: enkosi.

Siba: uzothini umama?

Me: come on Siba. My mom can't stand in the way of my happiness.

Siba: if you say so. Ima ndi lale. I've got work tomorrow.

Me: ok bye.

We hung up and to be honest she sounded disappointed in me. And she was just pretending to be happy because I left her with

no choice..

I guess we'll have to see where this takes us.

[05/14, 11:49] Mk: Insert 4

.

.

Monday morning was work. I woke up to the sweetest message from Siya and that just made my day. I took a bath then got dressed in a black boycon dress and black heels. Fixed my hair. I had my natural hair. Yeah I have really long hair.

I went to the kitchen for breakfast then brushed my teeth and took my stuff and drove to work. I worked with Siba so I'd obviously bump into her at work. I got to work and got right to it. I was going through some applications and that can drain one.

Nge lunch Siba walked in.

Siba: my baby. Let's go for lunch.

Me: phi?

Siba: I don't know. Town, whatever.

Me: ok masambe ke

I took my stuff and we drove to Wimpy in town. I looked for a relevant parking spot and we walked in. Ordered burgers satya.

Siba: so tell me iqale nini lento yakho no Siya?

Me: Saturday. Can we not talk about him.

I knew if we carried on she'd probably judge me. Make me feel guilty for trying to make things right with him.

Siba: ok. Uya nini eKomani?

Me: I just got here nje.

Siba: it's just a question.

Me: Enzo needs to get used to me not being around so not anytime soon.

Siba: punishment kodwa. Uza nini yena?

Enzo usually visited well only when I'm on leave. I fetch her and she spends a couple of days with me.

Me: not sure yet.

Siba: Sunday kukho enye i chill sesh.

Me: ha! No Siba ndizo lala mna. I've got work on Monday.

Siba: we all do.

I didn't respond. I needed to get my life on track and I couldn't keep going to these parties like I have nothing to do. The day I gave birth to Enzokuhle I told myself I would never play games again I was living for her. She had to have a great future with everything she needed and wanted. I didn't want her to suffer and I use the excuse that "I had her at a young age".

After lunch we paid then drove back to the office. My day was busy, and it was only the first day so I was expecting more. After work as

usual I dropped Siba off at her place then I drove to Steers I was hungry and I wasn't really in the cooking mood. I got home and as always it was quiet. I considered taking my daughter but I know how it would hurt my mom so I decided to let it go.

I changed to my pjs then switched the tv on while eating my burger.

There was a knock on the door and I thought it was Siba and Buhle.

Me: coming!

I went to open and it was Siya.

I froze because he had a small bag with him more like an overnight bag.

Me: hi

He smiled and hugged me.

Siya: surprise.

I faked a smile. We may be dating but I would

still prefer he told me before coming unexpected.

I opened and he walked to my bedroom. My flat was one bedroomed. I don't usually have visitors so I don't need the other room.

I just stood there trying to think of ways to approach the matter without sounding like a bad person.

He walked in and held me from behind. He kissed my neck and I just stood there.

Siya: why are you do tense?

Me: nothing.

We went to sit down.

Siya: I'll be spending the night. I hope you don't mind.

Me: no not at all.

We watched tv together. I didn't really have food to offer him so if he was hungry he'd have to

make a sandwich or something.

Me: ah ndiyo lala.

Siya: so early?

Me: I have a long day tomorrow.

Siya: oh well masiyo lala.

We walked to the bedroom and he changed while I was already in bed.

Me: are you still at your friends place?

Siya: yep.

Me: mhh. Work?

Siya: I had a transfer so I work obviously.

Me: just asking. So have you started house hunting?

Siya: uh Luzuko and I looked at a few places so by the end of the month I would have made a decision.

Me: ok.

He pulled me closer and we cuddled till I fell asleep. I didn't even call my daughter and that made me feel bad.

.

So Siya and I spoke the following morning and he asked to move in with me. I was first hesitant but he begged and I finally agreed. Only because he complained about the living situation at his friends place, apparently he has girls over all the time. I mean I wouldn't want a bunch of thirsty girls all over my man. He brought all his clothes on Tuesday evening. It was quite a lot of stuff. But my place would be back to normal by the end of the month. I told my friends and Siba was the first to judge. I don't blame her though but I just wish she'd consider my feelings.

.

So it's Friday night and since kushushu I'm in my short pj's. And it's really tight. Ok I wouldn't

say I have a huge butt. It medium size. Visible too.

Siya: too short.

Me: I wore these yesterday and you didn't complain.

Siya: it's Friday today.

Me: mxm.

He chuckled. I took my phone and ordered pizza. I'm used to staying alone so he'd have to understand.

Siya: you and take outs.

Me: I cooked yesterday.

Siya: I've been here for 5 days and you only cooked once.

Me: I'm nobody's wife.

Siya: if you cook, I might wife you.

He gave me a seductive look and he got up to kiss me. He lay me gently on the couch and he

got on top of me. Things were getting a bit too heated but I carried on. I'd probably stop him before he gets to the real deal.

He was rubbing himself against me and groaning.

There was a knock on the door so I got because I thought it was the pizza guy. To my surprise it was my mom and Enzo. I literally froze till Enzo jumped to my arms from my moms.

Mom: surprise

I was really surprised. I let them in and my mom just stood shocked when she saw Siya.

Mom: hayi ngu mhlola.

To make matters worse the pillows were on the floor and his jean was unbuttoned, I don't even know how or why.

Enzo: tata!!

I put her down and she ran to him.

Mom : yey wena Satana yeka lomntana, unxibe uhambe apha.

Me: hayi mama.

Mom: Mbali leave this to me.

Me: I don't want help. Siya stays here.

She laughed in disbelief.

Mom: I clearly wasted my money taking you to expensive schools. Umuncu mahm Mbali. Can't you see this man is playing you.

I looked at Siya who was busy with his daughter.

Me: uhm Siya can you please go. Just for tonight.

He nodded. Kissed Enzo then me and he took his car keys and walked out.

Mom: why are you doing this to yourself? You're smart, beautiful, fun. You can get someone else but him.

Me: why do you hate him so much?

Mom: He only wants to destroy you, even a fool can see that. He's jealous of you.

Me: wow.

Mom: I tried I really did. Don't say I didn't warn you when he leaves you for someone better.

I couldn't believe she said that to my face. So much for a mother...

[05/14, 11:49] Mk: Insert 5

.

.

After that whole session of arguing and crying my mom decided she'd sleep on the couch and I went to sleep with my daughter. She was already fast asleep after supper.

I fell asleep immediately.

The next morning my baby woke me up.

Enzo: mama!

I looked up and she was all smiles.

Enzo: uphi utata?

Me: use ndlini yakhe.

Enzo: uzoza?

Me: andazi but siya kwi movies neh?

Enzo: yey!!

She immediately jumped out of bed and went to the bathroom. I went and poured water in the bath tub then we took a bath together. After our bath she wore jeans and a white shirt. I wore my olive jumpsuit and maroon heels, fixed my hair then walked out. My mom was having coffee and she looked like she hadn't slept at all. She had bags under her eyes. That hurt me to the core. I was the one responsible for my mom's heart break once again.

Me: morning ma.

She just looked at me and smile.

Me: uh we're going out. Wanna join us?

Mom: no, hamba no Enzo I'll be fine.

Me: are you sure?

Mom: ewe.

We had breakfast then left. We first drove to the beach and she played with the water. She enjoyed the beach too much. We took pictures together then drove to Hemingways.

Enzo: uphi umakazi?

She calls Siba that.

Me: ukhona.

We finally arrived and I took her to Electric Avenue, there was laughter and so much excitement in her voice. After that long day we went for lunch then movies. I was so tired and now Enzo was fast asleep.

I drove home and arrived at like 4. Carried Enzo inside and my mom was in the kitchen cooking.

Me: we're back.

She turned and smiled. I took Enzo to my bedroom then walked back to the kitchen. I needed to speak to my mom.

Mom: Siya came to fetch his clothes this afternoon.

Me: huh?

Mom: he said he'd go back to his friends place and by Monday he'd have his own place.

Me: oh. Mama I'm really sorry for hurting you like that but can you please just let me follow my heart just this once.

She just smiled.

Mom: ok sthandwa sam. I'm giving him just this one chance. If he ever does anything, I'll make sure I hurt him myself.

I hugged her for the longest time ever then finally let go and she kissed me.

She finished cooking at 6 and we had supper. Enzo was still fast asleep.

Mom: mvuse she won't sleep.

Me: myeke. I'll probably stay up with her.

Mom: ok.

We finished and I washed the dishes then went to bed. And obviously Enzo woke me up at 11 and I fed her. We stayed up together almost half the night, watching tv while my mom slept.

.

On Sunday they left and it was just tears. I'd never stop crying when I leave or my mom and Enzo leave. So I haven't heard from Siya since he left on Friday. I definitely wasn't going to Luzuko's house since I knew he had that Sunday chill sesh. I didn't want drama. Siba and Buhle were probably there so I didn't really have someone to chill with. Watched movies for the rest of the afternoon then had supper. My mom had cooked for me before she left . After supper I went straight to bed and slept immediately.

The next morning was work. I hate Mondays. I got up. Went to take a bath, dried myself then lotioned my body and got dressed. My phone rang and it was Siya. I rolled my eyes then answered.

Me: Siya

Siya: no baby, love or whatever.

Me: more like prodigal boyfriend.

He chuckled.

Siya: I needed to give you and your mom space.

Me: one minute call to at least check on your daughter.

Siya: I'm sorry. Can we meet for breakfast?

Me: no I'm already late.

Siya: lunch then?

Me: sure.

Siya: plus we can go see my new place.

Me: ok.

Siya: I love you ok?

Me: ok

I hung up then got dressed in a knee length skirt and shirt with my navy blazer and black heel. I looked myself in the mirror and I was hot. Had an apple for breakfast then drove to work. Traffic was hectic and I ended up being more late. I got to work and made coffee then got to it. Siba walked in.

Me: yho awunqabe.

Siba: I have to pull this lovey dovey thing with Luzuko kalok.

Me: yho.

Siba: how was your weekend?

Me: it was good. I got to spend time with my daughter and mom.

Siba: and you didn't tell me.

Me: bavele bafika Friday night.

Siba: uSiya yena?

She said that sitting down.

Me: he left kalok. Then there was so much drama.

Siba: yho. I saw him with this other girl izolo.

I was hurt a little.

Me: phi?

Siba: kula chill sesh. And she was introduced as his "girlfriend".

I was getting angry.

Me: nyani?

Siba: nyani. He was shocked to see me but he carried on like nothing happened.

Me: yho.

Siba: I'm sorry.

Me: it's fine.

I won't lie, I was hurt to the extreme. It hasn't even been 2 weeks and he's already cheating. It's quite obvious that he was busy with this girlfriend the whole weekend.

Siba left and I carried on with work. Since we were going to meet for lunch I used this as an opportunity to ask him. He told me to meet him at Steers in Vincent so I drove there. He was already sitting busy on his laptop. Dressed in a navy suit. I sat opposite him and it was only then that he noticed me.

Siya: oh you're here already.

Me: yeah.

Siya: ufuna ntoni?

Me: ribs please.

He got up and went to order. Came back and looked at me.

Me: what?

Siya: nothing. Just admiring your beauty.

Me: mhh

Siya: I got a house in Amalinda. 3 bedrooms and 2 bathrooms. You and Enzo might be moving in soon.

I choked on my saliva.

Siya: are you ok?

Me: yeah. So how did you spend your weekend?

Siya: with the gents obviously. So it was meat and booze.

Me: qha?

Siya: utheni u Sibabalwe kuwe?

Me: was she supposed to say something?

Siya: she probably told you I was with a girl right?

Me: mhh.

Siya: well that's my girl friend, as in female friend. We work together.

Me: ohh?

Siya: you don't trust me? We can call her and ask who she was with this weekend.

Me: that's not necessary.

They brought our order and we dug in.

Siya: how's our princess doing?

Me: fine. But she really wanted to see you.

Siya: you should've told me.

Me: I thought you'd call.

Siya: I'll make sure I see her soon.

Me: ok.

We finished eating then left. I was driving behind him to his new house. We finally got there and I parked. It was beautiful. We got inside and it was spacious.

Siya: like it?

Me: I love it.

He held me closer and kissed me, so deep I felt

like not letting go. He finally pulled out and looked me in the eye.

Siya: Marry me.

I just looked at him shocked. Nothing could come out of my mouth at that moment. He looked so sincere. I wanted to give him my answer but I just went mute...

[05/14, 11:50] Mk: Insert 6

.

.

I pulled away from his embrace and he looked confused. I've been with Siya for years and I know what he's about. I wouldn't move into anything so fast with him.

Siya: am I rushing things?

Me: yes

Siya: I'm sorry. I just thought since we've been together you won't mind.

Me: mhh. I actually mind. Ku late. I have to go back to work.

I kissed his cheek then walked out. I got to my car and let out a sigh. I didn't even realize I was holding my breath for that long. I drove back to work and just finished off then took Siba home.

Me: so like Siya asked me to marry him.

She was shocked then just let out a slight laugh.

Siba: he's joking right?

Me: that's what I also thought.

Siba: if I didn't know better I'd say he's hiding something.

Me: same here. But I'll try and find out.

Siba: finally you see the light.

I giggled.

I may have looked vulnerable in his eyes or his presence but I still had a brain. I had my heart to think of.

Me: I've always seen the light.

I finally dropped her off and drove home.

.

A month went by and everything seemed ok with Siya. I had to study him a bit and there seemed to be nothing wrong with him. Well there were girls here and there but we'd pull through. He had moved in to his new house and of course I visited sometimes and he did the same. We even went out on some weekends. I was in love and everything was going right. On Valentines day he proposed again and obviously I agreed but we agreed to take things slow. There was no ring or anything but he sent a letter to my family. My mom didn't even try to sound excited for me.

.

So it's a Saturday morning in February and the previous night was amazing with Siya.

I got up and kissed his lips and he carried on with the kiss, nice and slow. I giggled.

Me: I thought ulele.

Siya: I guess the kiss woke me up.

Me: you're dirty minded. Ndiyo hlamba mna.

I tried to get up but he pulled me.

Siya: just one.

Me: ha.a Siya you got it all last night.

Siya: mhh.

He had pleading eyes and I finally gave in.

We kissed then since I was on top I felt the big guy. He pulled my pj top off then my shorts.

Basically I was naked and he only had his boxers on. He opened the drawer with his free hand and took out a condom. I couldn't afford having another baby. I helped him put it on.

Then he immediately insert himself and I started grinding with his hands on my waist. He

kept groaning and saying stuff I couldn't even hear.

He went in too deep and I moaned. Immediately flipped me over and went in too deep, too fast, too hard.

I grabbed his back for grip.

Moans and his name were the only thing that escaped from my mouth.

I felt myself build up and I finally let it all out and he followed right after me and collapsed on top of me.

Siya: you're amazing.

I couldn't even breathe so I just smiled. After some time I got up and went to take a shower. It was long and warm. I got out and lotioned myself then got dressed. Siya was busy with a call so he walked out. I wore my navy jean and a white crop top with my flip flops.

Siya: uyaphi?

Me: I need to get my hair done.

Siya: where?

Me: Vincent.

Siya: I'll take you.

He went to take a bath then got dressed. We used his car then drove to Vincent. I haven't gotten a weave done in a while so I wanted something with curls. Siya sat the whole time.

Me: I'm done.

Siya: I'll pay. Umhle by the way.

Me: thanks

He swiped then we left for lunch. It was great being with him, a lot futhi.

.

So it was the weekend where he'd go to family for the negotiations. I drove down to Queenstown on the Friday and he said he'd be coming on Saturday. Ndifike ngo lala since it

was late. Both my friends were there. Bebezo lala ekhaya.

The next morning I woke up and went to take a bath. Made breakfast for everyone. My uncles would be arriving during the day. My mom walked in.

Mom: morning my love.

Me: morning.

Mom: so this is really happening?

Me: I guess so.

Mom: I can't believe you've grown up so fast.

Me: ha.a ke mama.

She was starting to get emotional. My friends and daughter came and we had breakfast. Bayo hlamba and my uncles arrived. I made tea for everyone.

Uncle: ufika nini lo mfana kuba late ngoku.

Me: it's only 2 nje.

Mom: he was supposed to be here at 12.

I went to my bedroom.

Siba: and?

Me: he's not here yet. My family is getting impatient.

Buhle: I can imagine. Call him.

I tried calling and it rang till voice mail.

Me: voice mail.

Buhle: yho. Let's go make lunch.

We walked to the kitchen and started cooking. Made lunch for everyone then at 4 we served them. I tried calling again and still the same result.

My family was asking thousands of questions so I just decided to sleep. Enzo came and slept next to me.

"Mama!!" It was Enzo.

Me: mhh.

Enzo: vuka ku late.

I got up and she smiled. It was already dark outside and God knows I was fuming with anger. How could Siya embarrass me like this.

Siba walked in with Buhle and my mom.

Siba: uh Mbali I called Luzuko to find out what's going on and it's not good.

Me: kwenzeke ntoni?

Mom: Siya was involved in a car accident esiza apha. He's been admitted.

Me: njani?

Siba: we don't know but Luzuko says its really bad.

I just broke down then and there. What if he doesn't survive, what am I going to tell Enzo when she asks about her dad. This was all a huge mess..

[05/14, 11:50] Mk: Insert 6

.

.

I pulled away from his embrace and he looked confused. I've been with Siya for years and I know what he's about. I wouldn't move into anything so fast with him.

Siya: am I rushing things?

Me: yes

Siya: I'm sorry. I just thought since we've been together you won't mind.

Me: mhh. I actually mind. Ku late. I have to go back to work.

I kissed his cheek then walked out. I got to my car and let out a sigh. I didn't even realize I was holding my breath for that long. I drove back to work and just finished off then took Siba home.

Me: so like Siya asked me to marry him.

She was shocked then just let out a slight laugh.

Siba: he's joking right?

Me: that's what I also thought.

Siba: if I didn't know better I'd say he's hiding something.

Me: same here. But I'll try and find out.

Siba: finally you see the light.

I giggled.

I may have looked vulnerable in his eyes or his presence but I still had a brain. I had my heart to think of.

Me: I've always seen the light.

I finally dropped her off and drove home.

.

A month went by and everything seemed ok with Siya. I had to study him a bit and there seemed to be nothing wrong with him. Well there were girls here and there but we'd pull

through. He had moved in to his new house and of course I visited sometimes and he did the same. We even went out on some weekends. I was in love and everything was going right. On Valentines day he proposed again and obviously I agreed but we agreed to take things slow. There was no ring or anything but he sent a letter to my family. My mom didn't even try to sound excited for me.

.

So it's a Saturday morning in February and the previous night was amazing with Siya.

I got up and kissed his lips and he carried on with the kiss, nice and slow. I giggled.

Me: I thought ulele.

Siya: I guess the kiss woke me up.

Me: you're dirty minded. Ndiyo hlamba mna.

I tried to get uo but he pulled me.

Siya: just one.

Me: ha.a Siya you got it all last night.

Siya: mhh.

He had pleading eyes and I finally gave in.

We kissed then since I was on top I felt the big guy. He pulled my pj top off then my shorts.

Basically I was naked and he only had his boxers on. He opened the drawer with his free hand and took out a condom. I couldn't afford having another baby. I helped him put it on.

Then he immediately insert himself and I started grinding with his hands on my waist. He kept groaning and saying stuff I couldn't even hear.

He went in too deep and I moaned. Immediately flipped me over and went in too deep, too fast, too hard.

I grabbed his back for grip.

Moans and his name were the only thing that escaped from my mouth.

I felt myself build up and I finally let it all out and he followed right after me and collapsed on top of me.

Siya: you're amazing.

I couldn't even breathe so I just smiled. After some time I got up and went to take a shower. It was long and warm. I got out and lotioned myself then got dressed. Siya was busy with a call so he walked out. I wore my navy jean and a white crop top with my flip flops.

Siya: uyaphi?

Me: I need to get my hair done.

Siya: where?

Me: Vincent.

Siya: I'll take you.

He went to take a bath then got dressed. We used his car then drove to Vincent. I haven't gotten a weave done in a while so I wanted something with curls. Siya sat the whole time.

Me: I'm done.

Siya: I'll pay. Umhle by the way.

Me: thanks

He swiped then we left for lunch. It was great being with him, a lot futhi.

.

So it was the weekend where he'd go to family for the negotiations. I drove down to Queenstown on the Friday and he said he'd be coming on Saturday. Ndifike ngo lala since it was late. Both my friends were there. Bebezo lala ekhaya.

The next morning I woke up and went to take a bath. Made breakfast for everyone. My uncles would be arriving during the day. My mom walked in.

Mom: morning my love.

Me: morning.

Mom: so this is really happening?

Me: I guess so.

Mom: I can't believe you've grown up so fast.

Me: ha.a ke mama.

She was starting to get emotional. My friends and daughter came and we had breakfast. Bayo hlamba and my uncles arrived. I made tea for everyone.

Uncle: ufika nini lo mfana kuba late ngoku.

Me: it's only 2 nje.

Mom: he was supposed to be here at 12.

I went to my bedroom.

Siba: and?

Me: he's not here yet. My family is getting impatient.

Buhle: I can imagine. Call him.

I tried calling and it rang till voice mail.

Me: voice mail.

Buhle: yho. Let's go make lunch.

We walked to the kitchen and started cooking. Made lunch for everyone then at 4 we served them. I tried calling again and still the same result.

My family was asking thousands of questions so I just decided to sleep. Enzo came and slept next to me.

"Mama!!" It was Enzo.

Me: mhh.

Enzo: vuka ku late.

I got up and she smiled. It was already dark outside and God knows I was fuming with anger. How could Siya embarrass me like this.

Siba walked in with Buhle and my mom.

Siba: uh Mbali I called Luzuko to find out what's going on and it's not good.

Me: kwenzeke ntoni?

Mom: Siya was involved in a car accident esiza apha. He's been admitted.

Me: njani?

Siba: we don't know but Luzuko says its really bad.

I just broke down then and there. What if he doesn't survive, what am I going to tell Enzo when she asks about her dad. This was all a huge mess..

[05/14, 11:50] Mk: Insert 7

.

.

After I finally calmed down I changed to my sweat pants amd a hoodie.

Me: I have to go see him

Buhle: we'll come with you.

I wiped my tears and took my car keys. Buhle

was driving. We arrived at the hospital and his parents were at the waiting room. I went over to them and greeted.

Siya's mom: unjani ntombi?

Me: I'm ok.

There was a girl next to her and she cleared her throat.

S mom: oh Lelethu this is Mbali, umama ka Enzo and Mbali this is Lelethu Siya' s wife or fiancée. Ebebuya kokwabo when all this happened.

I couldn't believe what I was hearing, so he said he'd come to see my family but he knew that he set that date for some other woman. I knew Siya was a cheat but this was evil. Why would he lie to my face, pretend to play happy families only to find out he's marrying someone else.

I went to sit down because I suddenly went dizzy. Siba and Buhle were by my side

immediately.

Siba: it's all going to be okay. I promise.

Me: it's not Siba, how could he lie like that?

Buhle: he's never deserved you Mbali. Live for your child qha.

I nodded. I was still in tears, I tried to pull myself together so I don't make a scene. I mean I didn't want his parents and wife to be getting suspicious and I get to embarrass myself more.

Me: masambe.

I got up and they followed right behind me.

Me: uh mama siyahamba.

S mom: ok ntombi.

The doctor walked in and I just stood because I wanted to hear what the problem was.

Dr: Mrs Booii?

The girl stood up. She was beautiful I must say. Yellow bone, white even. Pink lips, big brown

eyes, curves for days. She had even turned pink from crying.

Dr: uhm we've tried everything in our power to stabilize him and it worked but he needs some time to rest.

Lelethu: uhm can I see him?

Dr: just 5 minutes.

She followed the doctor and I just decided to leave. We walked to the car and I just let everything out.

Buhle: you'll be ok Mbali I promise.

Me: no

Siba: what can we get for you?

Me: lots of ice cream.

They giggled and they drove to the garage. Siba wangena yedwa. She came back with 2 tubs of chocolate ice cream and we drove home.

Me: uhm could you guys tell my family what

happened. I'm not in the mood the face any of them at the moment.

Siba: ok

I got home and went straight to my bedroom. Enzo was fast asleep. My mom walked in while I was busy with my ice cream.

Mom: how are you feeling?

Me: I'm okay.

Mom: nyani?

Me: well I'll try and be ok. I mean there's nothing I can't do about it but move on. He's married.

Mom: oh mntanam. I know you'll pull through. Uzoba right. He'll regret ever doing this to you.

I just nodded.

She hugged me so tight.

Me: you can let go now.

She giggled then pulled away. My friends walked in and we had ice cream till we fell

asleep. I felt a bit better but the pain was there.

The next morning I took a bath early in the morning and got dressed. Went to bath Enzo.

Enzo: ndifuna uhamba nawe.

Me: uya funda nje Enzo.

Enzo: funu hlala nawe.

She started crying. I wanted her to come stay with me I really did but I still needed time.

Me: uzohlala nam kalok. Thula.

She finally calmed down and I washed her face then dried her. Dressed her then we walked to my bedroom. I dressed her then we walked to the kitchen for breakfast.

My mom was already there.

Me: ah molo.

Mom: morning.

Me: we need to talk. Enzo wants to stay with me.

Mom: can you stay with her. Will you cope.

Me: she has a nanny here. I can just get someone for her sibe right. You know how I hate leaving her behind.

Mom: uh ok ke. You can take her. Just make sure she goes to school.

Me: she will.

We had breakfast rhen my friends finally came and we left. I didn't even want to stay at home much longer. It was a reminder of everything that had happened over the weekend. Siba and Buhle were driving. I really wasn't in the mood to drive. They drove themselves to their places and I drove to my place all alone. The minute I got home. I took everything that belonged to Siya and packed it in a black bag then put it in the lounge. He'd probably come and fetch it the minute he gets out of hospital.

I started cooking supper. I had supper all on my own. Emailed my boss that I won't be at work

the next day. I needed to go nanny searching and school hunting for my baby. After all that I had supper then went to bed...

[05/14, 11:50] Mk: Her heart- My story

Insert 8

.

.

I woke up the next day and I took a bath wore a mini skirt with heels. During the week I was a heels girl and obviously during the weekend It's sneakers. I wore my biker jacket then walked to the kitchen for breakfast. I poured cereal for myself then called my mom. The helper thing would be a problem.

Mom: Mbali.

Me: unjani mama?

Mom: good and yourself?

Me: good. Uh mama I was thinking, how about

usisi aze ngapha when I find a school for Enzo.
Plus she knows her better than anyone.

Mom: are you serious about this?

Me: ewe. My baby needs me as much as I need her.

She sighed. I knew she was hurt. But she knew this was bound to happen.

Mom: ok I'll speak to her later

Me: ok. Kiss Enzo for me.

Mom: ok.

She hung up and I knew that this didn't sit well with her but my child had to be happy. Her happiness came first.

I drove to Selborne. There was a pre school there and the price was reasonable plus it looked really nice. I spoke to them gave them all her documents and she got a space. I was so happy. Soon it would be just the two of us. After that I went for lunch at Spur. I needed steak and

I wine. Just to celebrate. After lunch I drove to Buhle's work place. I needed to thank her for the whole weekend. She worked at this law firm in Vincent. I got there and parked. Went through to reception and asked if she was busy and she wasn't so I walked to the boardroom. She was a PA for some lawyer.

I walked in and she smiled.

Buhle: awusezo flames

Me: enkosi.

Buhle: and what do I owe this surprise visit?

Me: I just came to say thank you. Thank you for being there for me through this past weekend. Well since forever mahn Buhle.

She smiled.

Buhle: that's what friends are for.

Me: I know but thank you anyway.

I got up and we hugged for the longest time

ever. We pulled apart when we heard someone clear their throat. I turned and God was he yummy. Small sexy hazel brown eyes. Dark skin but not too dark. Body to die for, his suit actually drew the shape of his arms. He was too much.

Buhle: oh I'm sorry sir.

I figured it was her boss.

Him: it's actually fine. I just wanted you to clear my diary for the rest of the day. I have a personal issue to attend to.

His voice was heavenly.

Buhle: will do sir.

He smiled then walked out.

Buhle: I guess I'm off.

Me: uyaphi?

Buhle: I'll sleep for the rest of the day. Please drop me off.

Me: sure.

We walked to the parking lot then got in my car and drove off. I dropped her off at her place then ndaya ku Siba. I had to thank her as well then after that I drove home. I called my mom and told her about the school thing and she sounded happy. She told me she was proud of me. That I wasn't letting this whole marriage thing bring me down. It happened and there was nothing I could do about it but move on. I cried about it and now I had to get over it. I couldn't allow Siya to have control over my life like that. He had to see me flourish and do bigger things without him.

So on Friday I'd go fetch my daughter and her nanny and they'd be moving in with me for good.

I had cereal for supper then fell asleep. I was really lazy to cook.

The next morning was work, I got up and did the normal routine then drove to work. I had to

catch up on the work I missed. I had lunch at my desk then after lunch I carried on. After work I drove Siba home and I went to my place.

The routine went on for a week till Friday. On Friday afternoon I drove home as usual then went to change and had something to eat.

There was a knock on the door and I went to open and it was Siya. I literally froze when I saw him. His arm was bandage and he had a crutch.

Siya: hi

It all came back to me. Emotions started building up, I was starting to get angry, teary and emotional.

Me: hi

Siya: uh where you leaving?

Me: yes.

Siya: oh. Can I please have 10 minutes of your time.

I opened space for him and he got in.

Siya: Mbali I am so sorry. I didn't mean for things to end like this.

Me: meaning?

Siya: you know I loved you. I still do, I will forever love you futhi but I just had to choose.

Me: did you have to let it go to extremes though. Couldn't you just end at me being your side chick? Did you have to humiliate me like that?

Siya: I'm sorry.

Me: you aren't sorry. You had all these months to change your story but no, you went right ahead because you couldn't wait to hurt me once again. I wish you would have just died in that car accident. Nazi izinto zakho. Phuma!

Siya: please just hear me out.

Me: do you want to lie again? Well no Siya I'm done listening to your lies.

He just stood there. I took the black bag and threw it outside then I pushed him out and

locked the door. Sat on the floor and cried my lungs out. I didn't realize I was this hurt till I actually saw him. I cried till I couldn't cry anymore. I went to get a glass of water than I left. It was 7 when I drove down to Queenstown.

[05/14, 11:50] Mk: Insert 9

.

.

I finally arrived after 9 and my mom opened for me.

Mom: I thought you changed your mind.

Me: no I had a little hold up.

Mom: mhh. Your food is in the oven. Ndiyo lala.

Me: ok.

She walked away and I opened the oven and had my supper all alone. I decided to call Siba, I needed to tell her what just happened.

Siba: you do know some of us are at our

"sleepovers"

I giggled.

Me: xolo I'll call you tomorrow then.

Siba: no thetha.

Me: uku bani kqala?

Siba: Luzuko obviously.

Me: you should just date him qha. Uyeke udlala ngomnye.

Siba: noo. Thetha.

Me: so like Siya decides to show himself at my place. Apologizes a million times with no explanation.

Siba: the nerve yazi ulapha and I feel like ndifuna uyom rubbisha.

Me: ha.a ke Siba

Siba: hayi Mbali I'm your big sis and I will take care of you.

I laughed a little.

Me: hayi Siba. He'll think I'm not over this whole thing or ndisa mfuna. Just let him be.

She let out a sigh.

Siba: fine.

Me: I love you too, bye now.

I hung up before she could say anything.

Walked to my bedroom and changed to my pj's then got into bed.

The next day was long, I just wanted to leave already so Sunday afternoon I packed everything in my car and my daughter was already in the front seat.

Mom: please treat her well, I want to be the way that she is when she returns.

Me: come on mama, she's my daughter.

Mom: ngu mntanam u Enzo.

Me: yeah yeah. But I promise we'll both be ok.

No sisi naye uzoba right I promise.

She hugged me one last time then I walked to my car and hooted then drove off.

Enzo: yey!

Lindi: ufuna ugeza ke ngoku.

Lindiwe was Enzo's nanny. She's looked after Enzo since she was born. And I trust her with my daughter.

I drove to the garage and bought goodies for the road and drove straight to East London. My baby kept talking non stop. She was so excited about moving in with me. We finally arrived and unpacked everything.

Me: ah Lindi I know the place is small but I'll work on getting a bigger place probably next month.

Lindi: akho ngxaki sisi.

I really wasn't feeling ok about it. Her sleeping in the lounge was not part of the plan. I guess I

didn't really think it through.

Lindi cooked then we had supper and went to bed. Prepared for the next day. It was going to be Enzo's first day.

I woke up the next day and took a bath with my baby she was so sleepy, shame. But she had to get used to it. We got dressed then went for breakfast.

Enzo: i coco pops mama.

She said that sulking.

Me: I'll buy them today.

Enzo: yho. Ndihluthi ke.

You'd swear she was older, just by the way she spoke but she was only 2, well turning 3 soon.

Me: sufuna sixabane ke neh?

She knew there was trouble when I said that. She pulled her bowel and ate.

Lindi was already awake in the lounge.

Me: ah siyahamba ke Lindi. Yonke into ikhona.
I'll see you at 4 or 5.

Lindi: ok sisi.

Me: call me Mbali.

She smiled then I walked out with Enzo.

Me: so are you ready?

Enzo: ewe. Mama utata uza nini?

Me: I don't know baby.

Enzo: akandifuni?

Me: uyayazi nje uyakuthanda utatakho.

She smiled. We finally arrived at her school and I walked her in. She got more excited when she saw the play area.

Enzo: wow mama!

Idrama ekule ntombi kodwa.

Me: I know baby.

I got introduced to her teacher and some of the

nannies then signed a couple of things and I left. I was already running late. But lucky for me there wasn't much traffic anymore.

I drove and as always I slowed down as the robot went orange but today wasn't my lucky. I felt a car bump against mine, from the back. At first I was so scared but I decided to go out.

It was too bad buy my light was broken. U "Mr Accident" finally decided to come out of his car and to my surprise it was Buhle's boss.

He smiled when he got out and I kept a straight face.

Him: what a lovely surprise.

He walked closer to look at the damage.

Him: I'll pay just call my PA, we can settle it without police.

Me: excuse me? Sizo linda right here till the police arrive.

Him: I have to be in court in 5 minutes. Ndiyaku

cela.

Me: does it look like I care? It's not my fault you left your office late.

He took out a card and gave it to me.

Him: please call my PA. I'll deal with you the minute I come out of court.

He got in his car and drove off.

Such arrogance, nxx. But he was so hot.

I got in my car and drove to work. I was so late and I knew my boss would be on my neck about being late.

I got in rushing and she was already there standing right in front of my office. She was a very strict, you could tell she was in charge. Mrs Biyana.

Me: I'm so sorry I'm late. I had a little hold up.

Biyana: don't you dare make your problems mine. I expect you to be here at 8 everyday no

excuse.

Me: yes ma'am.

She walked away and I got in and started working. Before I could forget, I decided to call Buhle.

Buhle: sthandwa.

Me: hey.

I was looking at his business card the whole time.

Buhle: and how are you?

Me: perfect you?

Buhle: good.

Me: Mr Ngoma? Does he have an opening today?

She laughed.

Buhle: wena no Mr Ngoma?

Me: I just need to set an appointment with him, today.

Buhle: iyho. Well he only has 30 minutes and that is at 1:30

Me: perfect. I need to see him then.

Buhle: Mbali don't be mean I need to know.

Me: I'll let you know. Just chill.

I hung up before she would continued. I carried on working then at lunch I drove to the garage and bought a pie then ate it in my car. At 1:20 I drove to Vincent. Mr Ngoma's work place. I arrived at exactly half past and went to the waiting area. Buhle came, she smiled when she saw me.

Buhle: ngena. I'll wait for you right here. I need to know everything.

Me: it's strictly business.

I walked in and he was busy with a call. I went to sit right opposite him til he wrapped up his call. Came to my side and stood in front of me leaning on the table.

He looked so yummy but I had to concentrate.

Ngoma: what do you want me to do, buy you a new car?

Arrogance.

I rolled my eyes.

Me: I just need my car fixed.

Ngoma: sure then. I'll need your car keys and I'll drop you off at work.

Me: sure.

I gave him my car keys and we walked out.

Buhle gave me a look but I just smiled and walked away. We got to the parking lot.

Me: funny how your car doesn't even have a dent.

He smiled.

We got in the car and he drove off.

Ngoma: I'm Khwezi by the way. Khwezi Yanga

Ngoma.

Me: Mbali'entle Siphosethu Seti.

Khwezi: interesting. Are you a beautiful flower though?

Me: I usually leave that to people.

Khwezi: mhh. I'm sorry about your car by the way. I was in a hurry. I had this important case I needed to handle.

Me: as long as you're going to fix it.

We arrived at my work place.

Khwezi: can I have your number?

My heart started twerking then and there. I nearly zoned out.

Me:why?

Khwezi: I need to call you when I bring your car.

He said that in a sarcastic way, it almost sounded gay.

Me: oh.

He handed me his phone and I dialed my number then saved it.

Khwezi: thank you Miss Seti.

He smiled and I got out. Walked out then walked inside. I knew his was watching me because I could feel his eyes on me. Got back to work and finally some guy dropped off my car...

[05/14, 11:51] Mk: Insert 10

.

.

At 4 I knocked off then walked out of the office with Siba.

Siba: I heard about the whole Mr Ngoma thing.

Oh uBuhle kanene.

Me: huh?

Siba: don't you dare act lost.

Me: I don't know what you're talking about.

Siba: Mbali sudika.

Me: hee andazi nje.

Siba: God, andiphinde ndithethe nawe.

I laughed.

Me: I'll tell you and Buhle at the same time.

Tomorrow? Lunch?

Siba: sure then.

I dropped her off at her place then went to fetch my princess. She was so happy.

Me: and then? How was your first day?

Enzo: beku mnandi.

Me: I'm glad.

We drove home and as always Lindi was cooking. I'm going to enjoy having her around.

I went to take a shower because I had a long day. After my shower, I wore my pjs. It wasn't

really warm so I wore my gown too. My phone rang from the dressing table and it was Siya. God knows I'm not in the mood for him.

Me: Siyabulela.

Siya: that's a first.

Me: yeah ufuna ntoni?

Siya: you don't have to be mean you know.

Me: ufuna ntoni?

Siya: why didn't you tell me my daughter stays with you now?

Me: and wena uve ngabani?

Siya: I called your mom because I wanted to talk to her but she told me she stays with you now.

Me: mhhh

Siya: why are you turning my daughter against me?

Me: and why would I do that?

Siya: because I broke your heart.

Me: you should know mr by now. I don't hold grudges. I'm so over that vha. I'm happy for you but I just hope you won't forget what you did to me when karma pays you a visit.

Siya: what are you saying Mbali?

Me: nothing. Now if you'd excuse me.

I hung up before he could say anything and my phone rang again.

Me: what do you want from me?!

"Someone is in a bad mood"

It was Khwezi. I was so embarrassed.

Me: I'm so sorry. I thought it was someone else.

Khwezi: care to share?

Me: nope.

He chuckled.

Me: so Mr Ngoma what did I do to deserve such

a late phone call?

He chuckled again.

Khwezi: quit the formalities. I just wanted to check on how you are.

Me: what would be the problem?

Khwezi: you were in a mini car accident this morning.

I burst into laughter. Is this guy serious?

Khwezi: I'm glad you're finding this funny.

It was quiet for a few seconds and that was the moment I realized I actually kind of like the guy.

Khwezi: mind meeting me for lunch tomorrow?

Me: I have lunch with the girls tomorrow.

Khwezi: dinner?

Me: I can't really do late nights.

Khwezi: woman, you are so difficult.

Wednesday lunch then.

Me: ok.

Khwezi: I'll send you the details then.

Me: ok

Lindi walked in.

Lindi: awa ncuma?

Me: its a friend.

Lindi: hayi khange ndibuze.

I just kept on smiling.

Lindi: supper is ready.

We walked out and went to the lounge.

Enzo: mama ndifuna i swimming.

Me: I know sthandwa. Saturday siya shopping.

She smiled.

We finished supper then I washed the dishes.

Spent a couple of hours watching tv then sayo lala after 9.

The next morning we did the norm with my

daughter, I dropped her off at school then drove to work I was early so I went to get myself coffee then started doing some research on this Khwezi guy. I know I sound like a stalker but I had to be prepared for the next day. I know it's just lunch. I started working then I had a disciplinary hearing to attend. After that long session it was lunch. Siba came to my office immediately.

Me: you should have been a journalist.

She laughed.

We both walked out and drove to Vincent. That's where we'd be meeting Buhle. She was already waiting for us at Mugg and Bean.

We hugged then sat and ordered.

Buhle: I missed you girls.

Me: I saw you yesterday.

Buhle: we didn't really sit and talk.

Siba: sizele u Mr Ngoma apha.

Buhle: Siba! Wena ne ndaba.

Siba: mxm. So whats happening?

Me: nothing is happening.

Buhle: then why do I have you on his diary for lunch tomorrow?

Siba: please be honest. We won't judge.

She looked so serious and I just laughed.

Me: there is nothing I swear. He bumped into my car, asked me to come to his work place to discuss the damage and that took place. The lunch is probably just to apologize.

Siba: what part are you leaving out?

Me: nothing.

Buhle: oh my gosh Mbali you like the guy.

Me: no

I said that trying so hard not to blush.

Siba: I can see right through you and I know you

like him.

Me: I don't.

Buhle: well Mr Ngoma is a nice guy I'm sure you'll enjoy hearing him apologize.

I giggled.

Our order finally arrived and I dug in.

Me: ok fine. Maybe I like the guy but it ends there.

Them: finally!!

Me: niya ngxola.

We had our lunch with a conversation in between then finally Siba paid the bill. We take turns when it comes to the bill. I dropped Buhle off then we left no Siba. Got to work and continued. I needed to take a break, work was a bit too much.

After work we left and I went to fetch my daughter. Still energetic as ever.

.

So Wednesday finally arrived. I wore a navy knee length tight dress with navy heels. It was quite a hot day so I didn't really need a jacket. The dress was boob tubed. Showed off my curves perfectly. Maroon lipstick with no make up. I don't do make up, mommy said I'm a natural.

So before I left Siba popped in.

Siba : mngani you are fabulous. He won't know what hit him.

Me: thank you.

I fixed myself one last time then left since he said he's outside. Yes, he insisted on fetching me.

I got to the car and he opened the door for me. We drove to this surprise location with a random conversation about the day. Finally arrived at Grazia and we walked in, hand in hand.

You'd swear we're going to some important gala dinner. Got to our table and he opened the chair for me.

Khwezi: what would you like to drink?

Me: red wine please.

I don't care what time of the day it is, or who I'm with. Red wine is my bestie.

He opted for water.

Khwezi: so tell me about Mbali?

Me: what would you like to know?

Khwezi: everything.

Me: Mbali is originally from Queenstown. The only child. My mom raised me. I'm 23 turning 24. I have a 3 year old daughter. She stays with me now and yeah that's it.

Khwezi: interesting. Don't you want to know about me?

Me: I obviously do.

Khwezi: Khwezi is a lawyer. I kinda own that law firm. Well it belongs to my dad but soon to be mine. Born and bred here. Only left for varsity. I have 2 sisters. And yeah. Well I'm 28.

Me: oh wow.

Khwezi: so where's the baby daddy?

Me: I don't even wanna talk about him.

He chuckled.

Khwezi: that bad?

Me: very bad but that's a story for another day.

Khwezi: mhh. You know I'm glad the whole accident happened.

Me: really?

Khwezi: yeah. I got to meet you properly.

Me: I could have still met you at your office.

Khwezi: I don't do office meet ups. That's why I never paid attention to you the day we first met.

Me: ohh?

Khwezi: bad experience with the receptionist.

I laughed, he had this weird facial expressions.

Me: I can imagine.

Our food finally arrived and we ate.

Khwezi: so when can I meet your daughter?

Me: why would you meet her?

Khwezi: I'm friends with her mother. I'm sure Buhle has met her.

Me: oh sure. I don't know. We'll see.

Khwezi: mhh. What are doing Saturday?

Me: shopping with my daughter.

Khwezi: it's a date then.

Oh God this guy is moving too fast. Enzo will get all types of ideas.

We carried on eating while having a conversation.

The guy was really nice. Something I'd call my type but it was too soon for all that.

He paid the bill then we walked to his car.

Khwezi: I enjoyed spending time with you.

Me: likewise.

Khwezi: don't tell me you're those girls.

Me: which girls?

Khwezi: the I love you and they reply with me too type of girls.

I burst into laughter.

Me: no I'm not those girls.

He let out a sigh of relief.

His phone rang.

Khwezi: sorry I have to take this.

I nodded then played with my fingers.

Khwezi: baby... uphi?... ok I'm on my way.. I love you too

He hung up then looked at me.

Khwezi: I hope you don't mind someone else, it'll be quick I promise.

Me: it's fine.

So this guy was going to fetch his girlfriend with me. My mood dropped to zero immediately. And I couldn't even show it because I'll look obsessed or something. It's going to be a long day...

[05/14, 11:51] Mk: Insert 11

.

.

He drove to Vincent and it was quiet.

Khwezi: and then?

Me: I'm just looking at the time.

Khwezi: relax you'll be back at work before you know it.

We finally arrived and parked in front of a girl

wearing school uniform. She got in the back.

Her: bhuti

Khwezi: sthandwa.

Her: thanks for fetching me uyamazi utatakho. He would have been on my neck the whole afternoon.

They laughed.

Khwezi: oh sorry Mbali. This is my little sister Chuma and Chuma this is my friend Mbali.

I turned to face her and she had the biggest smile on her face with her hand stretched out. I shook her hand.

Chuma: you don't have to sugar coat anything though Khwezi. I can keep secrets.

Khwezi: she's just a friend.

Chuma looked so much like Khwezi but a lighter version. She was beautiful. I couldn't really see her body because she was in school uniform.

Nice English accent plus she goes to a girls school just like I did.

Chuma: so you say.

Khwezi: I just have to drop her off then I'll take you back to work.

I just nodded.

He drove to his parents place and Chuma got out went to his brothers side. Kissed him then just waved at me and she walked away.

You'd swear these two are dating. But I loved their relationship. I kill for a relationship like that with a sibling.

Khwezi: she likes you.

Me: and why do you say that?

Khwezi: I know my sister.

Me: mhh. How old is she?

Khwezi: she's 17.

Me: interesting.

We finally arrived at my work place and as always he came to open the door for me.

Khwezi: I enjoyed myself with you. I guess I'll see you Saturday.

Me: sure.

He looked me straight in the eye and I did the same. This guy was killing me.

Khwezi: can I kiss you?

I giggled. Who asks such a question though. I nodded shyly and he went in. God, his lips were something else. It felt so magical. I was pinned against the car and his hands on my arms.

I pulled away before we could go into deep. I sucked on my lower lip.

Khwezi: don't do that.

Me: why?

He looked down and I followed his eyes. And he was hard. I laughed.

Me: bye Khwezi.

I walked away feeling all so mighty. I love it when I can turn someone on then leave them hanging.

I got to my office and Siba was seated.

Siba: niqale endlini?

Me: lento kutheni?

Siba: you're late.

Me: it was harmless lunch to apologize.

Siba: right!

She said that walking away. She stood by the door.

Siba: I bet thats why some of your lipstick is missing.

I laughed.

Me: Sibabalwe ndiyeke.

She walked away.

I sat down and thought about the day we had. I think I'm falling for this guy. I know it's too soon but I can't really help it. You can't really control your feelings.

I got back to work.

At 4 I knocked off and Siba was already waiting for me by my car.

Me: motho wa motho

She laughed.

Siba: you're in a good mood.

Me: aren't I always?

Siba: you should have lunch with him more often.

Me: it's not him.

Siba: keep telling yourself that.

I let out a sigh.

Me: do you think I should tell him how I feel?

Siba: of course. How else would he know?

Me: I don't know.

Siba: mxelele ke.

I agreed. Dropped her off then went to fetch Enzo. Her dad called while we were still on the way home. Siya knows how to ruin a good day.

Me: hello

Siya: unjani?

Me: good wena?

Siya: great. Can I see my daughter on Saturday, my wife wants to meet her.

See now I don't want to sound bitter but I can't really change the plans because I want to satisfy him.

Me: we already have plans. I'm sorry.

Siya: don't be bitter.

Me: I'm not being bitter. I can't change my plans on last minute. You can see her on Sunday after

church of course.

Siya: why can't you do that?

Me: I brought her here. When were you going to see her if I didn't?

Siya: I still pay for everything.

Me: Siyabulela I wish you could understand it's not about money. I could pay for everything all on my own. I don't need your money. Nx. It's either Sunday or next week.

I hung up.

Enzo: ngu tata lowo?

Me: ewe. Uzoku bona Sunday.

Enzo: finally.

She said that rolling her eyes.

Me: hee.

We finally arrived and I took our bags and walked in. I told Lindi not to cook. I'd be ordering in. I needed to give her a break.

.

.

So Saturday morning Khwezi called to confirm if we're still on and I agreed. We both took a bath no Enzo. She wore her white shirt with jeans and I wore that too. We had breakfast. Went to watch tv for some time then Khwezi came to fetch us. Apparently he preferred using one car if we're going to spend time together. He saw the two cars thing as a waste of resources(petrol to be specific). We arrived at Hemingways then shopped for my daughter.

Khwezi: she looks so much like you.

Me: I know.

Enzo: mama ndilambile.

Khwezi: ufuna utya ntoni?

Enzo: pizza.

Khwezi: Panarrotis it is then.

We walked to Panarrotis and ordered pizza. My daughter was welcoming so she just went with the flow. We had a conversation about everything. With just laughter in between. After lunch I had to tell Khwezi how I feel.

We took all the shopping bags to the car and drove to my place.

Khwezi: beku mnandi Enzo?

Enzo: very.

She said that nodding repeatedly.

Me: I need to talk to you.

Khwezi: concerning?

Me: sizo thetha.

Khwezi: I'm scared.

We finally arrived at the complex.

Me: iya endlini Enzo.

She got out to hug Khwezi then she walked to the door.

Khwezi: thetha ke.

Me: uhm ok. I haven't known you for long right. It's only been a week I guess. I'm not forcing you into anything but I think I kinda like you. Not in a friendly way. Like, I have feelings for you.

He just looked at me with a straight face. Couldn't even read his facial expressions. Oh God I messed up. I was only thinking of running...

[05/14, 11:51] Mk: Insert 12

.

.

As he was about to respond my phone rang and it was Siya. This guy bores me. As if playing with my heart was not enough he still tries to make my life miserable by using my daughter.

Me: Siya

Siya: where do you get the nerve to go out with my daughter and other men while I get to suffer.

Me: so you're stalking me?

Siya: that's not the point. Point is I'm not allowed to see my daughter but other men are.

Me: when you can act your age. And talk to me like a normal father, call me.

I hung up before he could respond because I knew we'd be going up and down. Arguing about everything there is to argue about.

Khwezi: baby daddy?

Me: yeah.

Khwezi: he must be a hand full.

Me: two hands full.

He chuckled. At least that got to lighten up the mood.

Khwezi: you're amazing, you know that?

I blushed but tried to hide it.

Khwezi: you are. I mean it takes a lot of courage to coffee your feelings to a guy. And I know I

led you on.

Me: ok just tell me I shouldn't have and I'm such a fool.

Khwezi: no. I like you I really do. I liked you from the first time I saw you in my office with Buhle. I know you've been through a lot and I have been too. We both have a lot of baggage and I guess we can take things slow.

Me: what do you mean take things slow ?

Khwezi: you know what I mean. Make us work but I don't want us to rush things.

I knew exactly what he meant but I just needed him to say it.

Me: mhh

Khwezi: so we're together?

I nodded shyly and he pulled me in for a kiss. I pulled out as always.

Me: I need to go.

Khwezi: I'll see you tomorrow then.

We kissed one last time and I took the shopping bags and walked inside. Enzo was fast asleep. She must've been tired from the day we had.

I unpacked everything then went to start cooking.

Khwezi and I were together but it felt weird. I had gotten myself into another relationship and I had drama waiting. He even said so himself, he has a lot of baggage. Now when one can say that about themselves just know it's about to get real. Khwezi seems like these guys who can get any girl and that for me was another problem. He seemed like a one night stand type of guy but we'd sort that all out as time goes by. Then there's Siya who is already causing drama and this whole Khwezi thing. Why didn't I just listen to my mother. Mothers know best and she knew what she was talking about but I still fell for him.

I finally finished cooking. Served everyone because Enzo was also awake now. After supper I washed the dishes. Khwezi called then I went to bed. I was also tired. I really needed a break from everyone.

The next morning ndivuswe yi knock at about 6. Lindi came to knock at my door as I was wearing my gown.

Lindi: ndonqena uvula.

I walked to the front door and opened and it was Siya.

Me:at this time?

Siya: I just thought I'd come fetch my daughter before you go to church.

Me: ulele.

Siya: mvuse kalok.

I attempted to close the door but I stopped and looked at him.

Me: You are beginning to become a nerve. A pain in the butt vha. Stop using Enzokuhle to get to me. She's our daughter and it's not her problem everything happened. The least we can do is try to be civil for her sake.

Siya: I am being civil.

Me: too much if ask me.

I said sarcastically.

I went to wake Enzo up. Bathed her then fed her. She left with her father and she was so excited..

[05/14, 13:49] Mk: Insert 13

.

.

After Enzo left I took a quick shower then got dressed in a royal blue dress and black heels. Fixed my hair then had my breakfast.

Lindi: ubuya nini u Enzo?

Me: no clue.

Lindi: ok masiye ecaweni.

She went to wear her shoes then we left for church. I make sure that I go to church every Sunday. That's how my mom raised me and I never want to disappoint her in any way.

Lindi: utshatile uSiya?

Me: utsho.

Lindi: yho hayi uxakile.

Me: too much. But andi khathali.

We arrived at church. The service went on for a couple of hours then saphuma. I switched on my phone and I had a couple of missed calls. So I called Siba first.

Siba: mamfundisi.

Me: babes.

Siba: uphi?

Me: driving home you?

Siba: home. Let's go out. Buhle is on her way.

Me: ok I just need to go change.

Siba: shap.

I arrived at home and called Khwezi since I had a missed call from him too.

Khwezi: babe.

Me: hey.

Khwezi: are you ok?

Me: ewe wena?

Khwezi: same here. Uh are you busy?

Me: I'm going out with friends.

Khwezi: oh okay then. I guess I'll see you afterwards.

Me: mh ok then.

He hung up sounding a bit disappointed but I had already made plans. Wore black jeans, bra

crop top and a denim jacket with strap heels.

I wasn't sure where we'd go but I had to be prepared for anything. I took my car keys and left. Drove to Southernwood and the girls were already outside.

Me: siyaphi?

Siba: the beach.

Buhle: don't tell me kukho oLuzuko.

She rolled her eyes and honestly nam this Luzuko guy was starting to bore me. Not because he's friends with Siya but because he always has parties and girls around him. Like I wanted someone better for Siba. I know they are both just playing around but she might fall in love and she will hurt.

Siba: it's not actually. Zezinye iguys.

Me: and where do you get these guys from?

Siba: I know people.

I drove to the beach and we looked for these guys and finally found them.

Buhle: ha! Kukho no Khwezi apha.

I looked around and he was there. He was wearing jeans, white t shirt and denim jacket.

Me: unjani na Siba.

Siba: we can't go anywhere so we might as well just go to them.

She got out then Buhle and I followed. We greeted everyone with hugs. There were 4 guys and a couple of girls. I wasn't even in the mood to talk to them.

Siba: oh Samkelo these are my friends. Mbali and Buhle.

This Samkelo guy looked yummy too.

Sam: are you guys from around?

Me: yeah.

Buhle: ndilambile mna.

Trust Buhle when it comes to food. She couldn't starve to save her life.

Guy1: there's meat and snacks masambe.

She left and I just stood with Siba and I knew she was also going to leave soon. That's how it always happens.

I sat down next to this Sam guy. He smelled good.

Sam: don't you want something to drink?

He was referring to me. And I shook my head.

Khwezi: baby come here.

I didn't respond. Kwavele kwathula and everyone looked around.

Khwezi: Mbali ke.

Siba looked at me and smiled.

Me: ndiyeke wena.

I took my chair and went to sit next to him.

Khwezi: how was church?

Me: great.

Khwezi: waqonda uzophuma wenze izinto ezi unholy.

Me: ndizo hlala nje apha. I won't drink.

Khwezi: I hope so. Andifuni uku cola phantsi.
I laughed out loud and everyone looked at us.

Sam: get a room.

Khwezi: it's too soon bro.

Siba: mntase awuyi funi ne cider?

I shook my head.

Me: no thanks sthandwa.

Khwezi: mna theni ndinga bizwa sthandwa?

He was whispering that while nibbling on my ear.

Me: chill.

Khwezi: let's go buy something for you to drink.

Me: sure.

We stood up.

Me: Siba we'll be back just now vha.

Siba: I want all the details.

Me: details about going to the shops? Sure then.

We went to his car and this time he was driving a black Golf R.

I sat at the front seat and we drove off to the garage having small convos about random stuff. We bought a few snacks for me then we drove back to where everyone was. When we got back Buhle was back with this guy of hers.

Siba: and the two love birds are back.

Buhle: what am I missing?

Me: nothing.

Siba: we are both missing a lot.

Sam: yekani omnye abe happy.

Me: thank you.

They had their shots and ciders while I just drank my energy drink and ate my chips. I never drink on a Sunday no matter what.

It was starting to get dark and my phone rang and it was Lindi. Khwezi held my hand so I don't get up and they just switched off the music.

Me: hello.

Lindi: hello sisi ku late ngoku and uEnzo akakabuyi.

I looked at the time and it was 6. Siya can't take Enzo at 6 in the morning and not bring her back by this time.

Me: ah ok I'll call him.

Lindi: ok sisi.

I hung up and everyone was looking at me.

Me: excuse me.

I tried to get up but Khwezi held my arm tighter.

Me: Khwezi I need to make a phone call.

Khwezi: masambe.

We walked to his car. And I called Siya. It rang till voice mail and I tried again and he picked up.

Siya: Mbali.

Me: When are you bringing Enzo home?

Siya: soon.

Me: she has to bath and sleep soon.

Siya: I know that.

Me: can you please bring her back.

Siya: she's my daughter too. She can sleepover if I want her to.

Me: don't you dare push me too far.

Siya: what are you gonna do?

I let out a sigh and Khwezi looked at me.

Me: I'm only giving you 30 minutes vha? And if she's not back by then, hell will break loose.

I hung up before he could continue.

Khwezi: I didn't know you had that side to you.

Me: everyone has sides.

Khwezi: yho. I just pray you don't bite me.

Me: I don't bite unless you give me a reason to.

He got closer and kissed me. He just knows how to cool me down. I moved over to sit on top of him. The kiss was getting intense then he pulled away.

Khwezi: we'll go all the way. Just not now. And when we do...

His voice was a bit deeper and he had this dirty look in his eyes.

Me: so Mr Ngoma thinks I'll get scared.

I said rolling my eyes.

Khwezi: when you beg me to stop, I'll remind you of this day.

Me: please do.

Khwezi: I will.

I looked at his jeans and he was hard so I just got closer and sat on him just to tease.

He looked at trying so hard to be serious and I started grinding. He tilted his head and groaned.

Me: I hope you remember this day when I make you scream my name like a little girl.

I said that in his ear still grinding. I stopped then looked at him.

Khwezi: woman you are nasty. Lets go.

Me: we can't leave while you're still like that.

We chilled in the car for some time then finally got out and I told my friends I'm leaving.

Hugged everyone then kissed Khwezi. We both left at the same time. Apparently he couldn't stay there without me. Sam was going to take my friends home.

I got to my place at the exact same time no Siya. Enzo was fast asleep in his arms.

Me: do I always have to be rude with you?

Siya: it's your specialty.

I slapped him and he couldn't believe it.

Me: I'm no longer that naive little girl you impregnated then left. I just hope you know that. I won't jump every time you ask me to. Sapha lomntana.

I took her bag then carried her and we walked inside...

[05/14, 13:50] Mk: Insert 14

.

.

2 months later..

Siya was no longer that nuisance of a baby daddy. We made a schedule for his visiting hours and so on. His wife probably advised him or he realised being an ass about everything won't take him anywhere.

We had moved into a new flat but it was in the same complex. The only difference was that it had 2 bedrooms. So Lindi would have her own room. My mom also visited here and there and we also visited.

Khwezi and I were still fine. Our relationship grew stronger by the day. I slept over on some weekends but for 1 night only. I had a daughter to think of and he understood.

So now it was May. A very cold month if you ask me. I hated winter with everything in me.

So I woke up on a Thursday morning. I went to take a quick shower then went to wake Enzo up and bathed her. I wore my maroon tight dress with black stockings and a maroon half boot(heel), black leather jacket. I fixed my hair then applied maroon lipstick.

Enzo wore jeans and a jacket with a boot.

We went to the kitchen for breakfast.

Me: warm milk?

Enzo: nope.

She hated warm milk but I just asked to make sure. I poured cereal for her and cold milk. I had muesli then we went to brush our teeth and left.

Enzo: mama cela i lipstick nam.

Me: nge weekend kalok. Uya eskolweni ngoku.

Enzo: ukhulu ebendi faka yena.

Me: mhh.

We finally arrived at her school and I dropped her off then drove to work. I got myself coffee then went to my office. Siba was there waiting.

Me: morning

Siba: good morning. I have an important message for you.

Me: yes.

Siba: we better start looking for new jobs.

Me: why?

Siba: just do as I say.

Me: yho.

Siba: there are rumors about the company.
Might be sold to some German guy.

Me: ok thanks.

Siba: lunch?

Me: I already have to be somewhere.

Siba: Khwezi?

Me: yeah.

Siba: why don't you just get married?

Me: uyagula. I'm not ready to be anyone's wife.
Commitment is too much.

Siba: nyani.

We continued chatting then she decided to
leave and I started working. Before lunch
Khwezi called and asked what I wanted to eat

and I chose Mc Ds. At lunch I drove to his office.
We were having lunch there.

I went to reception and the receptionist told me
to go through. He was still with Buhle.

Buhle: baby.

Me: sthandwa.

She came to hug me.

Buhle: let's do drinks tomorrow night.

Me: sure. Sothetha later.

She hugged me again then walked out.

Me: Ngoma.

He just looked at me.

Me: Khwezi.

He still had a straight face so I went to sit
opposite him the took fries out of the Mc Ds
paper bag.

I had my fries in complete silence.

Khwezi: sies awukwazi ucenga.

Me: was I supposed to beg? Kchange utsho.

Khwezi: obviously. But no uMbali is thinking fries.

Me: sorry love but I had to have the fries just yo gather strength.

Khwezi: mhh

He knows I hate it when he does that. I prefer someone says 'oh'

Me: Khwezi Yanga Ngoma.

I chuckled.

Khwezi: xolo. I forgot.

I had my burger while completely ignoring him.

Khwezi: how's Enzo?

Me: perfect.

Khwezi: and how are you?

Me: I'm all good you?

Khwezi: ok.

Me: utheni?

Khwezi: work. I have quite a few cases I'm working on. And it's draining.

Me: shame. I'd help if I could.

Khwezi: you can help by giving me a massage.

He smiled.

So I finished eating. Cleaned my hands and got right to it. He seemed so calm and relaxed.

Khwezi: you should open a spa.

Me: noo.

The door opened and some old man came through he wasn't too big. He had a great body. And he was coloured.

Him: Khwezi Ngoma.

Khwezi immediately got up to shake his hand.

Khwezi: Raymond Collins.

The office was such a mess and this looked formal so I tried to tidy up.

Khwezi: no baby yiyeke. We won't be long.

I went to sit.

Khwezi: oh by the way this is Mbali'entle Seti my girlfriend and baby this Ray Collins my business partner.

I got up to shake his hand and this old man looked at me for the longest time ever. I pulled my hand away and only then he was brought back to earth.

Khwezi: so Ray what do I owe this visit.

They walked to one side of the office and whispered everything. I couldn't even hear a thing.

Once they were done Khwezi seemed to be over the moon but the old man was normal.

Ray: Mbali. It was nice meeting you. I guess I'll see you around.

Me: likewise.

He walked out.

Me: and what's the good news?

Khwezi: my hard work is paying off.

Me: oh I'm glad.

We carried on chatting then after lunch I left for work. It was still cold. After work I went to fetch Enzo then we drove back home.

.

On Friday night I was preparing to go out with my friends. I wore my jeans and sneakers and vest. Khwezi was to take me to the club and bring me back home. He didn't want me driving while drunk. I never even get drunk to a point where I can't drive anymore.

He came to fetch me and we drove to this club in Vincent. It wasn't full because it was still early.

Siba: so you've got your own chauffeur.

Me: I have to kalok.

Buhle: kuzi lekese vha.

Me: sweet everything.

Buhle: guess whose suddenly in a relationship?

Me: you?

Siba: me!

Me: Luzuko?

She nodded shyly.

Me: I knew it.

We had a few shots then at 22:30 I called Khwezi and he arrived 30 minutes after.

I hugged my friends and he drove me home

Khwezi: so how was your night?

Me: it was fun I guess.

Khwezi: qha?

Me: ewe.

We finally arrived at my place and he walked me to the door. It was already dark inside.

Khwezi: goodnight.

Me: night. I love you.

Khwezi: I love you more.

He leaned in for a kiss and it was deep and full of passion. I was leaning against the door and he opened the door with his free hand the switched the lights on and someone cleared their throat. I stopped immediately and looked to see who it was and it was my mom. I couldn't believe my eyes.

Me: mama.

She was sniffing.

Khwezi: I better go.

I walked him out. He kissed me again and I pulled away.

Me: bye.

He got in his car and drove off. I locked the door and got back to my mom.

Mom: your new boyfriend?

Me: ewe

Mom: he looks decent.

Me: he is.

I sat down next to her.

Me: what brings you here?

Mom: your dad.

I froze. My mom never wanted me to even mention him. She would shout me if I even asked about him. I knew nothing about my dad. The only thing I knew was that he was male. I've never even seen his picture and I've never heard his name. He was a subject that we weren't supposed to talk about. And now that she mentioned him I was shocked.

[05/14, 13:50] Mk: Insert 15

.

.

She got closer to me and held both my hands.

Me: andina tata mna.

Mom: he wants to know you better.

Me: mama, I don't have a dad. He's never been there for me.

Mom: ukhona baby. He stays here in East London. I'm really sorry baby. I'm sorry I made you hate him.

Me: you don't have to be sorry. You never made me hate him. He did this on his own.

She shook her head.

Mom: you don't understand Mbali. I made you hate an innocent man.

I was so confused. How is someone who left a woman pregnant, innocent. He never ever came

back to see how I was. He didn't even know me, I don't understand why he hated me so much.

Me: ok it's fine.

I hugged her and she cried in my arms. I rubbed her back.

Me: it's fine. I promise.

She suddenly went quiet then pulled out of my embrace.

Mom: I met him when I was doing my last year in nursing. He had business in Queenstown and I saw him every weekend. 6 months into the relationship he told me he was married and I was already pregnant by then. I wanted to abort you but he begged me not to. He promised to support you. After I gave birth to you I told him to leave me alone. And that was the last time he saw you. He sent money every month and and I sent pictures every now and then. So when he saw you he immediately called me and begged me to talk to you and tell you the truth. I'm sorry

I lied to you about everything.

By the time she was done I moved away from her. I was in tears. How can a woman be so evil. I asked her every year on my birthday if she could make contact with my dad but she just chose to paint him as the bad guy. And to make things worse, she wanted to abort me. I had Enzo at a young age but abortion wasn't even an option for me.

I was in tears.

Me: who are you? Why are you so evil?

Mom: I'm sorry Mbali. I just thought he'd chose me over his wife. I was selfish.

Me: who is he?

She looked the other way and swallowed really hard.

Mom: Raymond Collins.

I froze. So my boyfriends business partner was my long lost dad. But how can one be so selfish.

I longed for q father's love, ended up looking for it in all the wrong places but she just chose to keep quiet and lie to my face for her own selfish reasons.

Me: why are you so cruel?

Mom: xolo baby. I'm sorry.

I walked to my bedroom and locked. I couldn't be in the same house as this woman so I called Khwezi. He should be home by now. He answered after what seemed like forever.

Khwezi: babe.

Me: ah Khwezi are you busy?

Khwezi: I'm never busy when it comes to you.

Me: can I come over?

Khwezi: ah ok but I'll come fetch you.

Me: ok.

He sounded so confused. I packed my bags, I wanted to pack for Enzo too but I needed to be

alone. After about 30 minutes Khwezi called to say he's outside.

My mom was still in the lounge.

Me: I'll talk to you when I'm ready.

Mom: Mbali suyenza lento.

Me: mama please.

I walked out and got in the car.

Khwezi: what happened?

Me: she lied to me for 24 years. Kept telling me my dad left her but she's the one who told him to stay away.

Khwezi: yho that's hectic.

Me: very.

It was quiet.

Me: what business do you have with Raymond Collins?

He looked shocked then swallowed really hard.

Khwezi: we were working on some newly found business.

Me: mhh. Can I have his number?

Khwezi: why?

Me: because he's my long lost dad.

He stopped the car immediately.

Khwezi: wow!

Me: just drive.

He drove then we finally at his place. I just wanted to talk to Raymond. So Khwezi called him and I went to sleep .

I woke up in Khwezi's arms, I tried to get up but he held me tighter.

Me: I want to use the bathroom.

He finally let go and I went to the bathroom. I peed, washed my face then brushed my teeth.

Khwezi walked in.

Khwezi: he's already here.

Me: why?

Khwezi: you called him.

Me: I mean why so early?

Khwezi: the old man is serious about getting to know you.

I wore my gown then walked to the lounge and he was seated there already dressed in his suits.

Me: hi

Ray: good morning.

I sat on the couch opposite him.

Ray: I'm here to explain.

Me: I'm listening.

Ray: I shouldn't have left you when your mom asked me to but I couldn't marry her. I'm so sorry you had to grow up without me. I should have been the first man to show you true love.

Mbali I know you probably hate me but I want to

prove how sorry I am.

He sounded so sincere. And from what I gathered my mom was in the wrong. You can't use a child as a tool for marriage. Unlike other father's he still made an effort to support me even though I didn't know.

Me: I don't hate you.

I am a very emotional person so by now I was such a mess. Tears everywhere. He came over to sit next to me and he held me close to his chest.

For once I felt safe in a mans arms.

Ray: you're my daughter and I love you. No matter what happened back then. Let's just get everything past us.

I nodded faintly. I couldn't really move on like nothing happened. But I'd probably learn to forgive him as we go on. As for my mom, andazi, she was a different story. I know she

raised me but she didn't have to lie like that. I also deserved to know both my parents even though he was married. Ray didn't push too hard too but he had no choice really. Forgiveness is not easy...

[05/14, 13:50] Mk: Insert 16

.

.

Khwezi walked while he was still holding me.

Khwezi: ah Mbali, Lindi was calling.

I got up and went to the bedroom. I called Lindi and she answered immediately.

Me: Lindi.

Lindi: hello sisi uEnzo uyakhala ufuna wena.

Me: ok ndiyeza.

She hung up. I went to take a shower then I wore sweat pants and a hoodie. Took my bags and walked downstairs. Khwezi and Ray were

having a conversation, probably about business.

Me: please take me home.

They both turned to look at me.

Ray: come lets go.

I rolled my eyes.

Me: I was talking to Khwezi.

He looked disappointed. Khwezi got up and took my bags to his car. Ray left in his then we followed.

Khwezi: how are you feeling?

Me: I'm ok.

Khwezi: talk to me.

Me: I don't know how I feel. My mom lied to me. I ended up looking for love in all the wrong places. On the other hand Ray played my mom and he left me just like that.

Khwezi: they both probably have reasons to justify their actions. You just have to calm down.

Talk to the both of them at your calmest.

Me: I'll try.

Khwezi: and remember your mom raised you all on her own. She sacrificed her life for you.

True, but I still needed time to digest everything. She just threw a ball at me unexpectedly. She can't expect me to move on like nothing happened.

Me: I'll remember that.

Khwezi: I'll be at my place, working on cases. If you need me, call me.

I nodded. He pulled me in for a kiss then finally let go. And I got out and walked to my place. Enzo was already by the door.

Enzo: ubuphi?

Me: ndibuyile.

She smiled I walked to my bedroom and my mom was fast asleep. Her face looked swollen.

I suddenly felt bad. She may have done what she did but I don't like making my mom cry. I wanted to wake her up and tell her all was forgiven and we should move on but I needed her to rest.

I walked to the lounge and watched tv with my daughter. My phone rang and it was Siba.

Me: hello.

Siba: uphi?

Me: my place why?

Siba: siyeza.

Me: please don't. I just need some time alone. I'm going through a lot at the moment.

Siba: haibo you were ok yesterday. What happened?

Me: I'll explain when I see you guys.

Siba: ok. Ube right.

Me: I will.

She hung up and I just knew uzoza. Siba never lets go when I ask her to. She'll force her way through this too. She's too caring, never wants to see one suffering while she's around.

My mom walked in looking like she didn't even sleep.

Mom: Mbali

Me: mama

We said it at the same time.

Mom: thetha.

Me: uh mama I'm sorry for the way I acted. It was selfish of me. You're my mother, you raised me all on your own. I forgive you. We should put this behind us.

She smiled and tears escaped her eyes.

Mom: enkosi mntanam. I don't know how I would live with you hating me.

Me: I would never.

I got up to hug her. She held me so tight.

She finally let go and I wiped her tears.

Mom: so tell me about your guy.

I giggled.

Me: Khwezi is Khwezi. We've been together for 2 months now.

Mom: and you didn't tell me.

Me: come on mama, I had just gotten out of a relationship I didn't know how you'd react.

Mom: mxm hayi wethu. Siya is not something you should call a relationship.

I laughed and she joined me. There was a knock and I went to get it. It was Buhle and Siba. I laughed.

Siba: iphi i situation?

Me: idlulile.

I let them in and we walked to the lounge.

Siba: mama kanti ukhona.

Mom: ewe. Ndifike izolo.

Siba: and I came all the way because I thought you were dying.

Me: mama mxelele besikwi situation embi apha.

Mom: ewe. Let me go make breakfast.

She walked to the kitchen.

Buhle: what happened?

I told them everything from the beginning.

Buhle: yho yho. That is deep.

Siba: very.

Buhle: look on the bright side, you've got a hot daddy.

We laughed.

Me: I'm not ready to talk to him just yet. This morning he just explained but I'm good. I'm not ready to have him as my dad.

Siba: give the guy a chance Mbali. He might have left and not made an effort to see you but he probably had reasons.

Me: like what?

Buhle: maybe he was scared of his wife.

Me: exactly. What if his wife hates me.

Siba: umdala ngoku you don't need her to like you.

Me: everything just happened so fast. I need time.

Buhle: that man is goals vha. The clothes he wears, his cars. Yi dream come true.

Me: Buhle khawuyeke.

Buhle: xolo friend but it's true.

I just laughed because bendi xakwe ngu Buhle.

We spent the rest of the day together then they left at 3. Khwezi asked me to go sleepover and I agreed. He'd fetch me at 7, after I had bathed

Enzo and fed her.

I cooked supper then served everyone at 18:30.

Mom: yintoni ngoku satya early?

Me: I'm leaving.

Mom: heyi hayi mntaka Bawo lo Khwezi
ukwenza igeza.

Lindi: yeka u Mbali onwabe.

Mom: yonwaba mntanam. Wonwabise indoda
yakho ungathi ushiyiswa ndim. Hamba ndizo
mhlamba uEnzo.

I just laughed.

Me: I will do all my duties then leave. Uzolinda u
Khwezi.

I had half my supper then went to bath Enzo.

Enzo: uzohamba?

Me: ewe. Unga khali ndizo buya kusasa siye
ecaweni.

She nodded.

Me: promise?

Enzo: pinkie promise.

She held out her pinkie.

I kissed her then dried her and she got dressed in her pjs.

Me: uzolala no khulu okanye no Lindi?

Enzo: no Khulu.

I tucked her in then kissed her. I packed and overnight bag then changed to my wool/knitted dress then my black all star.

Khwezi was already outside so I walked to the lounge.

Me: goodnight fam.

Mom: don't do anything I wouldn't do.

She winked.

Me: my God mama I'm nkt having this

conversation with you.

She laughed and I walked out. Got to the car and he was busy with a phone call.

Khwezi: I won't make it tonight... just get it done... it's not that hard... I promise I'll kill you if you dare make mistakes or leave evidence... sure.

He hung up. Ok this was one weird phone call. And he was so calm.

Me: who was that?

Khwezi: some guy I'm presenting on a court case.

Me: ohh.

Khwezi: what do you want to eat?

Me: I already had supper.

He had a straight face.

Khwezi: ha.a ke.

Me: ok fine ndizoty

We finally arrived at his place and he opened. He walked me to the backyard and there were roses. He had this whole candlelight dinner going on. He opened the chair for me and he went to sit opposite me.

Khwezi: I did this for us. I know we haven't really been together for long but I'm happy we are. I love you with everything in me and I just want to show you a good time.

I smiled.

Me: enkosi.

He made a phone call and the food arrived. It looked so delicious.

Me: kupheke bani?

Khwezi: me.

I coughed.

Me: you've got dreams for days.

He laughed. We had dinner over a light

conversation. He tried by all means not to talk about this whole issue with my parents. Oqiba kwethu we walked upstairs. We decided to shower before we sleep.

We've showered together a couple of times but he never once touched me or made me feel uncomfortable.

I took off my dress and got in the shower, he got in after some time and he stood behind me holding both my arms.

Me: are you ok?

He was just too quiet.

Khwezi: yeah I'm ok.

He took my towel and washed my back.

The water was doing wonders to my body.

I turned around to face him and he hard. I kissed him when he least expected it. We kissed for the longest time ever then I pulled away.

Me: I think I'm ready.

We had agreed to take things slow and we haven't had sex. We spoke about it a couple of times but he told me he'd wait till I was ready.

Khwezi: are you sure?

Me: ewe.

He let out a sigh. Kissed me so deeply then walked me out the shower. He walked to the bedroom still carrying me. He placed me on top of the bed then looked at me. It all just felt weird that I covered my eyes. He pulled my hands away.

Khwezi: ha.a

He kissed me all the way to my cookie then stayed there. He licked and played with his tongue till I couldn't take it anymore. I wanted to release so I held his head but he went in deeper. I felt like my moans were pushing him to go further in. I let it all out while screaming his

name. My legs were shaking and he immediately lifted them up and placed them on his shoulders. His slid in a finger first. And it immediately sent shivers down my spine. He took it out and licked it.

I was still watching him when he decided to insert himself. I jumped, Khwezi was huge.

He pulled me back to him, held my thighs real tight then went in. I literally screamed. It felt like I was breaking my virginity all over again.

Me: Khwezi!

Khwezi: mhh?

He didn't even move then when I least expected it he moved slow. When he felt he was close he increased the pace.

It was just moans and screams. If there were people downstairs they probably would've heard everything but luckily we were alone.

We both came then he just lay on top of me.

Khwezi: one more or silale?

Me: one more.

He gave me a smile and I knew it was about to go down.

He got up and threw the cover on the floor.

He got on top of me and immediately entered. I jumped because I wasn't expecting it. He positioned me then held my hands together. He moved fast and rough. He let go of my hands then held my thighs. He stopped to look at me then when I wasn't expecting he went in hard. I grabbed the sheets then his back. I'm sure he had marks to prove it. The deeper he went deeper my nails went. He went in too deep that I felt him at the bottom of my stomach/abdomen.

Me: Khwezi!

As if that stopped him.

He went harder and faster till he finally collapsed on top of me. I guess its true when

they say dark skinned men fuck like they want to prove a point.

He rolled over next to me.

Khwezi: I love you and don't you ever doubt that.

Me: mhh.

Khwezi: andithandwa?

Me: I do.

Khwezi: wheres the girl that td me she wouldn't be scared?

Me: undiyeke mna.

He laughed.

Khwezi: I know.

Me: you fuck like you have a point to prove.

He laughed so loud.

Khwezi: ha.a ke baby. But you haven't seen nothing yet.

Me: I've studied you.

Khwezi: I'm very unpredictable.

Me: sobona. I wanna go shower.

We both got up and my legs were still jiggly.

Took a long shower then went to bed...

[05/14, 13:50] Mk: Insert 17

.

.

I woke up feeling super tired. Khwezi wasn't next to me. I got up and walked to the bathroom. Took a shower then brushed my teeth. Wore my towel then walked downstairs. Khwezi was making breakfast.

Me: good morning.

Khwezi: morning.

He came over to kiss me.

Khwezi: ina

He poured water for me and gave me the pill.

Me: thanks.

I drank that then we had breakfast.

Khwezi: are you going to church?

Me: ewe wanna come with?

He chuckled.

Me: what?

Khwezi: I'm not a church going person.

Me: just this once.

Khwezi: next time.

We finished eating then he washed the dishes and I went to get dressed. At 9 he drove me home. Ndafika and the family was waiting.

Me: molweni.

Them: ewe.

I walked to my bedroom. Got dressed in a knee length dress, coat and heels. I walked to the lounge and we left for church.

Mom: how was the sleepover?

Me: it was ok.

Mom: I should meet this Khwezi of yours.

Me: too soon.

We arrived at church and it was great but longer than expected. After church we went to Nandos for lunch. We drove home and my mom left immediately when we got home. She had work the next day.

Me: Lindi khangе uyibone i charger yam?

Lindi: ha.a umke nayo.

Me: ok ndiya buya.

My phone was flat, actually ibi cimile so I couldn't really contact Khwezi to ask if I left it there, the only option was to go there and find out.

Enzo: nam ndiya hamba.

Me: masambe.

We walked to the car and drove to Khwezi's. There were so many cars parked outside. Even Raymond's car was there. I walked to the door and there were bodyguards. Ok this was weird.

Guy1: sorry ma'am uyaphi?

Me: inside obviously. I stay here.

Guy2: name?

Me: Mbali.

One walked inside and I just stood there confused. After some time he came back with Khwezi and he looked shocked to see me.

Khwezi: Mbali? What are you doing here?

Me: wothuswa yintoni?

Khwezi: I wasn't expecting you.

Me: oh well I'm here.

He looked at Enzo then shifted his focus to her.

Khwezi: hey Enzo unjani?

Enzo: philile wena?

Khwezi: nam ndiphilile.

Me: so we're going to stand outside?

Khwezi: Mbali what are you doing here?

Me: Raymond said I should come see him.

I didn't even think before I said that. I don't even know what I was thinking to say that.

Khwezi: what for?

Me: andazi.

Khwezi: ima.

He got in alone and I pushed my way through. There were girls in bikinis, money everywhere, big guns and guys in suits. Raymond got up the minute he saw me.

Ray: Khwezi what is she doing here?

Me: Khwezi what is this?

Enzo walked in behind me.

Enzo: mama?

Khwezi picked her up and walked upstairs and I followed them.

Me: what's happening?

Khwezi: sit.

Me: I won't do that. I saw my charger, picked it up then took my daughter.

Khwezi: I can explain.

Me: I don't want to hear it.

I walked downstairs then to my car and immediately drove off.

Enzo: utheni mama?

Me: ndi right baby.

Enzo: nyani?

Me: ewe.

I got to my place and charged my phone while taking a nap.

I woke up and undressed. Wore my bra and panty then gown on top. Walked to the bathroom, did my business then walked to the lounge and Khwezi was there with Enzo and Lindi.

I just got irritated.

I walked to the kitchen for a glass of juice and biscuits then ndayo hlala elounge.

Lindi: sendizo qiba upheka.

Me: ok.

Enzo: cela undiphe.

Me: ha.a it's after 5, no sugary stuff for you.

Enzo: kodwa mama.

Me: hayi Enzokuhle.

Lindi walked to the kitchen.

Khwezi: we need to talk.

Me: talk.

Khwezi: privately.

I took my glass and biscuits then we walked to my bedroom and he locked.

Khwezi: I'm sorry about what you had to see earlier.

Me: I asked you Khwezi, what business do you have with my dad?

Khwezi: a normal business.

Me: what is normal?

Khwezi: a trading business.

Me: so why did you have guns?

Khwezi: there was a lot of money so we had to protect ourselves.

Me: khona why wasn't the money in your bank account?

He let out a sigh.

Khwezi: don't you trust me?

Me: I don't think I can trust you after today.

I had a sip of my juice and looked the other way.

Khwezi: ok do you want me to be honest with you?

Me: obviously.

Khwezi: I'm not who you think I am.

Me: meaning?

He breathed then got closer to hold my hands. I pulled away.

Khwezi: uhm I own an underground strip club.

Me: and?

Khwezi: I sell girls.

Me: is that all?

Khwezi: my dad and your dad have been working with cars and mines but illegally so I got involved in that too. We steal diamonds and gold then auction them. And we do that with cars too.

This was too much information and definitely not like Khwezi. None of this matched his character, especially the prostitution thing.

Me: wow.

I got up and moved further away from him.

Khwezi: you're the only person that knows. Your dad made me promise not to tell you but I can't risk what we have.

Me: no Khwezi, you're too much for me. We can't carry on like nothing happened.

Khwezi: Mbali don't do this. You can't just let go like we never had something special.

Me: I have a 3 year old, I can't risk my life.

Khwezi: Mbali, I don't care what you say or do but you're going to forgive me and we'll move on.

I just looked at him and laughed in disbelief. He can't force me to be with him. I mean I love him but this was too much to digest. I have never

ever dealt with this, and to top it off, the man I was willing to give a chance to know me better is also doing the same thing.

Me: please leave my place and never come back.

He knelt down in front of me and held my hands really tight.

Khwezi: please don't leave me. Please. I love you too much. I doubt I'd be able to live knowing I lost you over something so stupid.

Ndiyakucela MaMfene, please.

That just made me melt but I didn't show it.

I kept quiet for a very long time.

Me: fine. Phakama.

He got up and kissed me all over my face.

Me: khona why were there girls at your place?

Khwezi: the guys asked me to bring entertainment.

Me: mhh.

We stayed in the bedroom for 30 minutes then he left. I went to the lounge and we had supper.

.

The next day was the normal routine then obviously I dropped Enzo off then I drove to work. I had been applying in a few places. But so far work was great. Siba walked in nge lunch.

Siba: Mbalz.

Me: hey

Siba: masambe. Lunch is waiting.

We left and I drove to Steers. Safika and placed our orders then waited. This really hot guy walked in. Ebezi flames vha. But I have eyes for Khwezi only.

Siba: nantsi i candy.

Me: umjongile.

He walked over to our table and smiled.

Him: Mbali Collins?

I'm not a Collins but I am a Mbali so I'll respond.

Me: yes.

Him: Anda Somdaka.

He shook my hand and smiled.

Anda: I'm no stalker by the way. I just remember you from yesterday. Khwezi's place.

I nodded.

Anda: he's lucky to have you. Drama queen.

I faked a giggle then he said goodbye and left.

I can't believe I embarrassed myself in front of Khwezi's colleagues and my dad. Now they'll see me as the dramatic girl...

[05/14, 13:50] Mk: Insert 18

.

.

Our order finally arrived and we dug in.

Siba: so what stunt did you pull?

Me: nothing serious.

I couldn't really tell Siba about Khwezi's secret.

Siba: tell me kalok.

Me: I slept over on Saturday then forgot my charger so on Sunday ndaya but he was with friends and there were girls all over so I freaked out but it wasn't what it looked like.

She laughed.

Siba: noba ebene ntloni.

Me: maybe.

We finished eating then went back to work. I was exhausted already. It felt like I've been working for decades.

After work I dropped Siba off then went to fetch Enzo. It was Monday and we were going out. But we headed home first.

I changed to jeans, off shoulder top and heels.

Lindi was also ready so we locked then walked to the car. My phone rang while I was driving and it was Raymond. We haven't spoken since Saturday morning.

Me: hello.

Ray: how are you?

Me: I'm ok you?

Ray: I'm good. Do you have plans for tomorrow night?

Me: uhm no not yet.

Ray: Could you please come over for supper. I want you to meet the family.

Me: I'll be bringing people along then.

Ray: that's fine.

Me: I'll see you tomorrow.

Ray: enjoy the rest of your night.

Me: thanks.

Then I hung up. I let out a sigh. It was weird having him around. I got so used to not having a dad that it felt normal.

So we finally arrived at Hemingways then we walk to Spur. I didn't want anything fancy. We ordered then finally our order came.

Enzo: mama siyaphi ngomso?

Me: uzobona.

Enzo: sizoya nini?

Me: ebusuku.

Lindi: so ndinga pheki?

Me: ewe.

We finished then paid then I paid the bill then we left for home. I was tired so I'd get home and sleep. We got home and I bathed Enzo then tucked her in and I slept shortly afterwards. Didn't even speak to Khwezi and I wasn't going to call or anything.

.

The next day I woke up. Went to bath, got out and wore a black bodysuit with a grey pencil skirt and heels. I woke Enzo up, bathed her then dressed her. We walked to the kitchen for breakfast then we left. I dropped her off then drove to work. Got myself coffee then started working. The day seemed to be going slow or maybe I was excited about the night ahead.

Just before lunch my phone rang and it was Khwezi so I just decided to tease him a bit.

Me: hello.

Khwezi: babe unjani?

Me: whose this?

Khwezi: it's me, Khwezi.

Me: Khwezi?? Have we met before?

Khwezi: wow.

I laughed

Me: ibane chill, I'm only joking..

Khwezi: uyadika. So how are you?

Me: I'm ok you?

Khwezi: good. Are you still angry? We didn't talk yesterday.

Me: I'm not angry anymore.

Khwezi: oh. Uhm Saturday I'm visiting my parents, I was hoping you'd come with me.

Me: uh we'll see.

Khwezi: come on Mbali. I already told them you're coming.

Me: fine. I'll see you on Saturday then.

Khwezi: why are we acting like we're in a long distance relationship. You live 10 minutes away from me. Why can't I see you every day?

Me: you're always busy and I don't want to disturb.

Khwezi: I'd make time for you.

Me: ok I'm a bit busy now. I'll call you later.

I hung before he could respond. I honestly don't know why I did that and I knew he'd make a huge argument about it.

As always we went for lunch then got back to work. Raymond sent me the directions to his place then I dropped Siba off. Went to fetch Enzo then we drove home. I wasn't going to change. I felt that good. I took my bag and car keys then left for Raymond's place. He stayed in Gonubie. Found his house and there were a few cars parked outside. I pressed the intercom and I was buzzed in. I parked then got out.

Lindi: u ready?

My fear was the wife. She would probably hate me for my mom's actions.

I knocked and Ray opened. He smiled when he saw me.

Ray: come in.

We walked in and he led us to the dining room.

Me: good evening.

There was a woman who I assumed was his wife, surprisingly she was black. And there were 2 guys.

Them: evening.

We sat down.

Ray: Mbali this is my wife Amanda and these are your brothers, Libo and Nathan.

I just smiled.

Amanda: I'll go get the food.

She walked out.

Libo: I hope I'm still the first born.

We laughed.

Ray: you'll always be the eldest.

Libo: I hope so.

Nathan: so Mbali what do you do?

Me: I work. Human Resources Management.

Libo: interesting. Your daughter?

Me: yes.

Nathan: she's beautiful.

Me: thanks.

Their mom walked in with the food. It smelled divine. She sat down and served her husband. She was beautiful, seemed like the type that wanted to stay young forever.

Amanda: you can serve yourselves.

The guys stood up and dished up for themselves. I helped Enzo then I dished up for myself. Lindi did the same.

Libo: a little birdy tells me that you have a thing with the advocate.

He had this naughty smile going on. Everyone was looking at me.

Amanda: unga linge uphike umntana bantu.

I giggled.

Me: yeah we have a thing going on.

Raymond looked at me and I just looked away.

Ananda: Khwezi is a good guy. I'd probably snatch him if I was your age.

The boys burst into laughter. And Raymond just looked sour. I couldn't help but laugh.

We had our dinner over light conversation. Them trying to know me and vice versa. They seemed like a nice family. We exchanged numbers. It turns out Amanda knew about me when I turned 16.

It was good to have older brothers. People to protect me and chase away all the bad guys. We left but Raymond asked to talk to me privately. So we walked to his study.

Ray: you can sit.

I sat down. And he stood in front of me, leaning on the table.

Ray: are you serious about Khwezi?

Me: I am.

Ray: ok. If I could I'd probably change your mind about him.

Me: why?

Ray: you're my little girl and some people are dangerous for you, like him.

Me: if it's about the illegal dealings you do then I'm willing to go through anything just to be with him.

He looked shocked. Ok I just made the biggest mistake ever. Khwezi said I wasn't supposed to know.

Ray: so he told you?

Me: please don't ask him.

Ray: I won't. So how long have you been with him?

Me: 2 months now.

Ray: And he trusts you so much. He must be serious about you.

Me: maybe.

He chuckled.

Ray: so when am I seeing you again?

Me: we'll talk.

Ray: ok come here.

I stood up and he hugged me real tight.

Ray: I love you ok?

I nodded.

He let go then we walked out. Hugged the rest of the family then we left. Enzo was fast asleep.

Lindi: ba lungile kodwa.

Me: ewe shame. I was worried about the wife.

Lindi: unga vuyi kakhulu ke sisi abafazi bangcolile.

Me: I know.

We arrived and I went to sleep immediately. It was already past 10. The only worry was Saturday.

.

So Khwezi and I had a fight the previous day about me going out. I went out with my friends without telling him..

So I woke up on Saturday morning. Siya was fetching Enzo during the day. I took a bath with Enzo.

Enzo: uzoza utata?

Me: ewe.

Enzo: uyaphi wena?

Me: ndizo hamba ne tshomi yam.

Enzo: uSiba?

Me: ha.a uKhwezi.

Enzo: mhh. Ndizo hamba nini naye mna?

Me: sizo bona.

We got out then I dried the both of us. Wore jeans, denim jacket and Nike kicks. Let my weave loose.

Enzo wore jeans and a hoodie. It was a bit hot but windy since it was the beginning of June.

We went to have breakfast then sahlala elounge. It was already after 12 when a knock came through and I went to open. It was Khwezi.

Me: I thought you weren't coming.

Khwezi: why wouldn't I?

Me: andazi.

Khwezi: masambe.

I left the door opened then ndaya ku Enzo.

Me: uyeza vha utatakho.

Enzo: ok

Lindi: uzobuya nini uEnzo?

Me: before 6. If ubethe u6 engekho call me.

Lindi: ok.

I kissed her goodbye then left. We were using his car and bekuse tense.

Khwezi: theni wathula?

Me: no reason.

Khwezi: I'm sorry about last night or this morning. It's your life you can do whatever.

Me: Khwezi don't start because his will lead to another huge argument.

Khwezi: sure. Uzolala kum neh?

Me: ha.a

Khwezi: I only saw you once this week.

Me: ok whatever.

We drove to his place, well kokwabo to be exact. It was the 2nd time ndisiza. The first time was when we came to drop Chuma off. He parked then we walked in.

Khwezi: I'm home!!

Chuma appeared. And she jumped on Khwezi.

Chuma: biggie. I missed you so much.

Khwezi: I was here 2 days ago.

Chuma: maybe you should move back in.

Khwezi: never.

Their parents walked in and I got scared.

Khwezi: parents.

Them: hey.

K.mom: lets go to the back. Lunch is ready.

And I just had breakfast.

We walked to garden and a table was set with all goodies. Khwezi opened the chair for me and I sat down.

K.dad: so you're Raymond's daughter?

Me: yes.

His mom looked like she was irritated.

K.dad: are you going to introduce her?

Khwezi: I was about to. Ah babe this is my mom, dad then you already know Chuma. And then family this is my girlfriend Mbali.

K.mom: what happened to Zintle, she was a nice girl.

Ok that just confirmed everything, she doesn't like me.

Khwezi: please don't bring her up. At least not right now.

Chuma: funny how you said you were friends.

Khwezi: it was back then.

Chuma: lies lies lies.

K.mom: you can serve yourselves.

Khwezi: ndiku phakele?

Me: no I'll be fine.

I dished up for myself then we ate. Having a conversation here and there. The mother kept giving me looks and giving cold responses to

everything I said. And I didn't care.

After some time we left. I was irritated and I wanted to go to my place.

Me: please take me home.

Khwezi: you're sleeping over nje.

Me: Khwezi I want to go home.

Khwezi: is this about my mother?

Me: ewe.

Khwezi: don't mind her. She'll learn to like you.

Me: I don't need her to like me but I just don't like the stuff she said.

He stopped the car then came to my side and hugged me.

Khwezi: I'm sorry. I promise everything will be fine. She just needs time. And I'm sure she didn't mean the stuff she said.

He held on to me so tight then after some time, he let go then walked to his side and we drove

off..

[05/14, 13:50] Mk: Insert 19

.

.

We arrived at his place and to be honest I still wasn't ok. She doesn't even know me but she hates me so much.

Khwezi: are you ok?

Me: yep I just need to shower.

Khwezi: please don't lie to me.

Me: baby I'm okay, I promise.

Khwezi: I love you ok? And it doesn't matter what anyone says or thinks about it.

Me: ok.

We end up taking a long shower together and that obviously lead to one hot make up session.

.

So since its June it was the holidays and Enzo and Lindi were going to visit my mom in Queenstown so I'd be alone for the next 3 weeks. Ray suggested we move in with him but I didn't want to cause and trouble. And he seemed disappointed so I promised to sleepover on weekends. I don't know how that would work for me because my weekends were reserved for Khwezi.

So it's Friday night and I'm in Gonubie, still feels strange to call it home. I don't even know how my mom feels about this whole "newly found dad " thing.

So it's just before dinner and we are watching tv.

Libo: later tomorrow we're going out, wanna come?

Me: where?

Nathan: it's just clubbing. It won't hurt.

Me: I'm sure.

Dad: but Mbali I don't approve you going out with these 2.

Amanda: they are bad for you.

She was nice towards me.

Libo: just a couple of drinks. Khwezi will be there.

My dad's face immediately changed. He really did not approve of our relationship. He tried to hide it but I could see right through him. I couldn't really change the way I feel just to satisfy him.

Amanda: please come help me in the kitchen.

Me: ok.

I stood up and we walked to the kitchen.

Amanda: how's Khwezi treating you?

Me: we're still good. Honeymoon phase.

Amanda: good. And his mom?

Me: she hates me.

She let out a sigh.

Amanda: that's how she is. She one of those women who are obsessed with their sons that they even think of marrying them. She always sees the wrong in everyone.

Me: I can't take it anymore. The things she says to me and about me are too much.

Amanda: show her you don't care. She'll eventually give up.

I nodded. We took the food to the dining room and the plates and utensils as well.

Nathan: lets say grace.

We joined hands.

Me: Lord bless the food we're about to eat and the hands that made it. Amen.

Them: Amen.

Libo: that's Enzo's prayer.

We giggled.

Me: it's mine now.

We had our supper then I went to bed early. The next day I was going to Khwezi's place and I was going to sleep over. I don't know how my dad will take it but he'll have to deal with it.

I woke the next morning at 7. Took a long bath. Got out then lotioned. Wore my black jeggings, lace top and wrap coat. It was cold outside and plus the house was close to the beach so you can imagine.

Khwezi said he'd fetch me but I preferred I drive to his place. I didn't want to seem disrespectful.

I walked downstairs and Libo was already in the kitchen. I was closer to him. He was like the big brother I've always wanted. He was bubbly and fun, your gay tendencies type of guy. For the few weeks I've known him, he seemed like a player or fuckboy as he would like to call it. "You can't play what's not yours" he always says.

He is handsome, I'm a replica of him. You'd

swear we're twins. He's taller though. He has a great body, not too buff, your Donald type of body.

Me: Libongwe Anderson Collins.

Libo: don't.

I giggled.

Me: sorry. How's your morning?

Libo: headache, just got back from some club.

Me: you party all the time.

Libo: I don't get drunk though.

Me: whatever.

I make coffee and pour muesli for myself and I sit next to him on the high chairs.

Libo: uyaphi so early in the morning?

Me: Khwezi. For the rest of weekend actually but I don't know how your dad will take it so I wanna sneak out before he wakes up.

He laughed so loud I just got irritated.

Libo: you can't sneak out forever. Sooner or later you'll stay here and trust me he'll get used to it.

Me: it's just weird.

Libo: run little girl before daddy wakes up.

Just then he walked in and I got more nervous. He greeted then made himself breakfast. I finished up then walked to my bedroom and packed an overnight bag. I walked out and he was in the kitchen. It was now or never.

Libo: bye sis. I'll see you tomorrow.

He winked then walked out.

Dad: and where are you going?

Me: uhm I'm going out.

Dad: out?

Me: I'm spending the day and the night at Khwezi's.

Dad: ohh.

Me: yeah I'll be back tomorrow afternoon.

Dad: interesting.

Me: yeah so I'm leaving.

He nodded and I walked out. I got in my car and drove off. It was still 10 and I'm sure Khwezi was sleeping. I had the keys. Yeah he gave me the keys after I met his parents. I opened the gate and parked then went to open and I walked upstairs.

Me: Khwezi!

I got in the bedroom and just as I thought he was fast asleep look all kinds of cute. I took a few pictures then jumped on top of him. He immediately woke up.

Khwezi: ouch!!

Me: I'm not heavy.

I took my coat off then threw it on the side then

my shoes followed. I was still on top of him.

Khwezi: I need to brush my teeth.

Me: if awukho gay uzazi wedwa.

He hit me playfully and I rolled over to the side and he got up to brush his teeth. I took the rest of my clothes off then just remained in my lacey matching bra and panty.

He walked in and his jaw dropped.

Khwezi: uzondi linga.

Me: me? Never. I'm just feeling hot.

He got closer and sat down on the edge of the bed. I went and sat on top of him. He was hard in seconds.

I pushed over gently. I started kissing him and he responded. It was slow, I added a bit of fiest in it. I needed something that would take me to heaven. He kissed my neck and I let out a slight moan. He gave a few hickeys. I helped him take off his boxers and I inserted him in me. I made

sure I feel comfortable first. I wanted to get used to him being inside me. I started moving and he helped me. Kept groaning, saying my name but I didn't stop. Moved in circles, moved up and down then we finally reached the climax.

Khwezi: and what did I do to deserve that?

Me: I just love you.

He kissed me then just looked at me.

After a couple of minutes it was just sex nje. There was no time for making love it was just fucking. At around 1 we took a shower. I wore his shirt then fixed my weave. It was too big so I rolled the sleeves.

Khwezi: you look so tiny.

Me: don't start.

He laughed.

He always teased me about my height.

His phone rang and he looked at me.

Khwezi: it's your dad.

I walked out and went to the kitchen. Poured myself wine, I needed it after this long day. I had a few sips while speaking to my friends on our Whatsapp group.

Khwezi walked in, all dressed.

Khwezi: I'm sorry babe but I have to rush somewhere, your dad needs me.

Me: and when you be back?

Khwezi: 2 hour tops.

I nodded and he kissed me then walked out.

I went to switch the music on and I just played love songs. I sat on the kitchen counter drinking my wine. I was now on my 3rd glass and the intercom went on, I answered and it was Khwezi's mom so I let her in and she finally knocked. Today I was a bit tipsy so I was waiting for her to start with her nonsense and I'd chow her. I opened for her and she walked to

the lounge with me following her. I lowered the volume she sat down with my glass and bottle next to me.

K.mom: where's my son?

Me: he went out.

K.mom: and why the hell are you here?

Me: I stay here.

I just decided to push her buttons.

K.mom: you know Khwezi is just making you do all these wifely duties then one day he'll leave and go back to his true love, Zintle.

Me: he's with me now, isn't he? I'll cross that bridge when we get to it.

K.mom: Zintle was nicer she knew how to dress in front of Khwezi's parents. Andiyazi le uyinxibileyo.

Me: Khwezi and I are not married. And this is not your house so I guess I'll dress however.

K.mom: what do you want from him? Is it the money? I'll give you all the money you want just leave him alone.

Me: I have enough money to last me forever. In case you weren't aware my dad is Raymond Collins so I doubt I'll be needing a cent from you anytime soon.

K.mom: is that what you do? Ruin perfect relationships? First it was Khwezi and Zintle now its Amanda and Raymond.

I get up and stand in front of her.

Me: listen here woman. I didn't ask both these men to feel the way they do about me. And as for Khwezi, I am not leaving him anytime soon. We both love each other and sooner or later you'll have to accept me.

K.mom: will you still be this confident knowing he has a son with Zintle.

That hit a nerve. I swear I had tears

approaching but I was going to be a big girl and not cry about it.

Me: I can play step mommy.

I smile then walk away. I get to the bedroom and start crying silently. Why would he hide this from me. This Zintle girl was a threat even though I didn't even know her.

I packed my things and changed. It was late now and I was waiting for Khwezi.

He arrived at 7 and his mom had already left. He shouted my name but I didn't respond and he finally came upstairs.

Khwezi: I'm so sorry I'm back late, it was tough out there.

Me: Khwezi do you have a son?

He looked confused.

Khwezi: no why?

Me: I mean do you have a son with Zintle?

He cursed under his breath.

Khwezi: it was my mom wasn't it?

Me: just answer the question.

Khwezi: uhm we'll have to sit down.

That just answered my question. I took my bag and walked out and he ran after me.

Khwezi: Mbali she lied to me too.

Me: liess.

I missed a step then I fell and rolled down the stairs.

"Mbali, no!!"

That's the last thing I remember hearing and it was lights out...

[05/14, 13:50] Mk: Insert 20

.

Khwezi..

I ran to her and she was bleeding. She looked

unconscious, and now I started panicking because there was just too much blood. I picked her up and ran to her car since the keys were already in her hands. I drove to the hospital like a mad man. But lucky for me it was close by. I arrived then parked and carried her inside. She was taken to the emergency room. Raymond was going to kill me and to make matters worse he warned me just a few hours ago and he told me how he doesn't like me being with his daughter. I picked up my phone and called Libo instead.

Libo: the in law.

Me: Libo please come to Beacon Bay Hospital. And probably bring the rest of your family. Mbali just got admitted.

Libo: what the hell did you do to her?

I knew everyone would blame me. I've always been known to be a player and I admit I have been a bad boy but I am willing to change.

Me: please just get here.

I hang up and sit down to wait for the doctor. About an hour later Raymond and his family walked in. I started to get nervous. He walked directly to me.

Ray: I warned you Khwezi. What did you do to my daughter?

Me: she was leaving and she fell.

Ray: don't you dare lie to me boy. If something happens to her I swear I will kill you.

I swallow hard and he walks away. Knowing Raymond for years I know he would really do that. He's brutal and he shows no mercy.

Amanda walks over to me.

Amanda: hi Khwezi. Uhm what happened?

Me: I got home and she questioned me about Zintle and me having a child with her. I tried to explain but she walked away and the next thing I know she rolled down the stairs.

Amanda: ok. I'll call you if anything happens please leave for now. You know how my husband can be.

Me: I need to explain to her.

Amanda: I know and she needs to rest. You can come back tomorrow.

I nodded and drive to my friends place, still using Mbali's car. I got to Anda's place and he buzzed me in. He was with his girlfriend.

Anda: my guy! And the long face?

Me: long story.

Anda: Zim please get us drinks.

Zim: sure. Whisky right?

Anda: yes, with ice.

She nods and walks away.

Anda: what happened?

I tell him everything that happened today and how I suspect my mother telling Mbali

everything. The thing with Zintle is very complicated. But that is not my son. We dated for years and obviously I was cheating. She later did the same and that's when she got pregnant. I was going to marry her when my late grandmother told me the child wasn't one of us. And as an elder I believed her so I took for DNA testing and it turns out he wasn't mine. I got so angry I threw them both out and she ran to my mother and she welcomed them with open arms. I explained to my family what happened before I could break the engagement off but my mom was against it. She wanted me to raise the child as my own. I did that for a couple of months and I saw it wasn't working so I left her. But my mom seems to not accept it.

Anda: yho Raymond uzoku bulala.

Me: I know.

Anda: you can come stay at my place till he

calms down.

Me: sure. I'll go start packing.

Anda: don't bring your car. I'll come fetch you.

Me: thanks.

I pour another shot of whisky and I gulp it down.

Anda: khona why are you playing around with Raymonds daughter, uzofa sani.

Me: andi dlali. I'm serious about her.

Anda: I hope so. I don't want to carry your coffin soon.

We laugh about it then talk about other stuff.

And later I drive to my place and he follows me.

Anda is the closest thing I have to a brother.

He's practically family, after his divorce we became inseparable. And well I was the only family he had and his kids...

.

Mbali

.

I wake up in a hospital bed and my head hurts like hell. It feels like one hell of a hangover. I opened my eyes slowly and I see my dad and he looks pissed so I close my eyes again.

Dad: no use playing dead with me.

I open my eyes and he helps me adjust the bed.

Me: hi

Dad: what were you thinking Mbali? Don't you learn from your first mistakes.

I don't know what he's talking about and I won't try to think back because my head hurts like hell.

Me: what day is it?

Dad: Sunday.

Just then his wife and my brothers walked in.

Them: good morning.

Me: hey.

Ray: Mbali we are not done here.

Amanda: how are you feeling baby?

Me: my head hurts, well my body hurts.

Libo: what really happened though?

Me: I fell down the stairs.

Nathan: you can't just fall. I'm sure you know how to walk down the stairs.

My dad's face changed and I knew if I told them the truth Khwezi will be in trouble so I decided to lie.

Me: I was rushing and I missed a step.

They all get quiet.

Me: Libo please get me goodies. I don't like hospital food.

Libo: sure Nathan let's go.

They walk out.

Dad: how long have been sleeping with Khwezi?

I swallow really hard. I am definitely not answering this question. I just play with my fingers.

Dad: please answer me before I lose it.

Me: I'm not sure.

Dad: did you know you were pregnant?

I froze. This can not be happening.

I shake my head.

Amanda: well I'm sorry baby but you had a miscarriage.

My heart immediately breaks and I cry. Amanda is by my side comforting me. This is weird but I do need a shoulder to cry on.

My dad walks out and its just Amanda and I.

Me: does Khwezi know?

Amanda: no, well I asked him to leave when we got here. Your dad was in no good space.

Me: please call him.

I was still angry at him but I can't be dealing with a loss alone. This was our baby.

She calls him and he agrees after some convincing. He arrived after an hour and Amanda left.

Khwezi: hi. How are you feeling?

Me: bad. Khwezi I lost our baby.

He looked confused.

Khwezi: what do you mean?

Me: I had a miscarriage.

I wasn't ready for a baby but this really hurt.

He got closer to me and held me real tight, kept rubbing me telling me everything was going to be fine.

My dad walked in and I knew shit was about to hit the fan....

[05/14, 13:51] Mk: Insert 21

.

My dad came to stand next to me and Khwezi was calm as hell, made no move at all.

Dad: your mom is on the way.

I nodded then look at Khwezi.

Khwezi: Siba and Buhle are probably on their way too. I called them and heres your phone.

He took it out of his pocket and gave it to me.

Dad: Khwezi what really happened? I want to hear the real story.

Khwezi: we were arguing and I tried to chase her but she fell.

Dad: so it wasn't something you did?

Khwezi: I would never do that to her.

Me: uhm could you please give us space. I need to speak to Khwezi.

He walks out and I let out a sigh. I thought something bad was going to happen.

Khwezi: Mbali why did you walk out on me?

Me: I was angry. Your mother is a pain Khwezi. I know we aren't married but I would still prefer she respects me.

Khwezi: I'll talk to her.

It was suddenly quiet.

Libo opened the door and he paused when he saw Khwezi.

Me: ukutya kwam.

He greeted Khwezi, gave me my food then walked out.

Me: and the whole child story?

Khwezi: he's not mine. Zintle said he was mine but I got a DNA done. Turns out he's not.

Me: mhh.

Libo got me a chicken and mayo sandwich so I had that then drank juice. Khwezi was watching me the whole time.

My friends walked in and you could tell Siba was crying.

Siba: baby.

They both come to hug me.

Khwezi: I'll see you later then.

He kisses my cheek then walks out.

Buhle: we nearly died when we got the news.

Me: I'm getting better.

Siba: what happened?

Me: we were arguing, I walked out on him and I fell down the stairs and I lost our baby.

They both looked shocked.

Siba: and why didn't you tell us?

Me: I didn't know.

Buhle: and how are you feeling?

Me: it hurts but I'll be ok.

Siba: I can imagine..

.

My mom arrives and she's also dramatic about the whole situation. Well mostly the pregnancy thing. It's not like I planned it. She left when I was discharged, on Tuesday. She had work plus I was going to stay at Raymonds place till I heal completely. According to Libo I was never going to leave. I was on bed rest for 1 week and I'd go to work the following week.

It's Wednesday morning and I wake up at 10. The whole family is at work except for Amanda. She's a housewife. I brush my teeth then walk downstairs.

Amanda: tea? Good morning.

Me: morning, yes please.

She pours tea for me and we go sit by in lounge while I wait for my breakfast to be served.

Amanda: how are you feeling?

Me: I'm good.

Amanda: I'm glad.

She smiles.

Me: can I ask?

Amanda: go ahead.

Me: are you ok with me being here?

Amanda: I am. This is your home. You can stay as long as you want. I really don't mind you being here, at least I have someone to talk to. Your dad and brothers are always busy.

She may seem nice and all but I needed to ask because I felt I was taking the spotlight.

Raymond was always focused on me. I know he's trying to make up for lost time but he's put too much of his attention and time on me. Not that I mind.

We watch tv while I have breakfast. After breakfast I go take a nap. I have been tired a lot lately. Maybe I got used to the hospital life.

I spent most of my week sleeping and eating. I

finally made a decision to stay here. It would save me on a lot of money. Siya won't have to pay Lindi anymore. It would seem weird but I'll slowly get used to it. They brought all my clothes on Friday and my car was delivered during the week.

So Saturday I was going out with Khwezi. It was a double date thing. Us and his friend.

So I wake up. Took a long bath while talking to Enzo on the phone.

Enzo: ndizo buya nini?

Me: I'll come fetch you with uncle Libo soon.

Enzo: how soon?

Me: ima kalok sthandwa.

Enzo: ndiyaku khumbula mna.

Me: I miss you too.

Enzo: iza kalok.

Me: next week Saturday.

Enzo:yho but ok.

Me: xolo vha.

Enzo: ok love you.

Me: love you too.

We hang up and I get out to dry myself and since it's cold outside and close to drizzling. I wear jeans and boots with a grey coat. It's not too much, it's ok.

I head down to breakfast before I can do my hair. The whole family is there.

Me: morning everyone.

I hug everyone as they are seated.

Amanda: Ufuna ntoni?

Me: fruit salad. I've been stuffing myself lately.

Amanda: I've noticed.

I have my fruit salad then go upstairs to fix my hair. My dad walks in.

Dad: and where is the young lady off to?

Me: Grazia.

Dad: Khwezi?

Me: yes.

Dad: uhm baby listen. I don't want you to feel like I don't want you to be with the man you love but I'm just looking out for you.

Me: I'm old enough I think I can do that.

Dad: I mean from the real world. Khwezi has enemies and I'm scared of what they'd do to you. You're my little girl and I was to always be safe.

Me: I know.

Dad : I'm actually glad it's someone I know. So I know who to beat up when you cry.

I laugh.

Me: please don't.

He chuckles.

Dad: I won't promise you anything.

I finish with my hair and wait for Khwezi. He arrives and we drive off.

Khwezi: are you ok?

Me: yep you?

Khwezi: I'm good. I just missed you.

Me: I missed you too.

Khwezi: I should kidnap you.

I giggle.

Me: no thanks.

We arrive at Grazia and it's Anda and his girlfriend. The girl looks fine. She looks like a model, yellow bone. The whole purpose of the date was for me to meet the ladies. But I obviously had to start somewhere..

Anda: the brother.

They do this weird handshake.

Lady: I'm Zimkitha but call me Zim.

Me: Mbali'entle but you can call me Mbali.

We shake hands. And the guys smile.

Zim: ni ncuma ntoni?

Anda: you are introducing yourselves.

Me: because you were too busy with the handshake.

We sit down and order. Zim orders a bottle of red wine and I know then that we are going to get along.

Khwezi: you aren't drinking.

Me: why?

Khwezi: no babe and plus we can't fight in public.

I look at these two and snile. I really didn't want to seem disrespectful so I ordered juice..

Anda: so Mbali where are you from?

Me: Queenstown.

Zim: you grew up there?

Me: yep. I only moved here 5 years ago.

Anda: and you only met her now?

He was referring to Khwezi.

Khwezi: you and Zim have been here all your lives and you met last year.

Them: true.

Then they giggled.

Zim: I can't believe I've never met you or even seen you around.

Me: it was just school and now it's been work.

Anda: no clubs?

Me: here and there.

Anda: then how did you meet this fool?

Khwezi looks at me and laughs. We met in the weirdest way ever.

Me: I was driving like a normal citizen and he decided to bump into my car.

Anda is on stitches.

Anda: Khwezi unjani na wena?

We talk. Order food and everything goes well. Zim and I exchange numbers. Overall she's a nice girl. Very beautiful.

It's just Khwezi and I in the car and it seems like we're going to his place, as in his parents home.

Me: and then?

Khwezi: I love you and I love my mom too so it's time you sort out your differences.

I'm shocked and angry too.

We arrive and I stay in the car.

Khwezi: Siphosethu you don't want to see the other side of me.

He's definitely angry when he uses my second name.

I get out and we walk inside. His mom is in the lounge reading a magazine. She's also a housewife.

Khwezi: mama.

K.mom: hey boy.

I follow him every time he moves and he tells me to sit next to his mom.

Khwezi: mama I am tired of having to feel scared whenever I bring Mbali home. As long as I still love her she will come here and she will enjoy herself like she is one of us. Do you understand?

She nods countless times. I'd do the same.

Khwezi was serious.

Khwezi: so you will learn to accept her, I'm not forcing you to love her but if you love me you should feel something for her too. And stop bringing up Zintle. I lost my baby because of you and this Zintle thing.

She was shocked.

K.mom: your baby?

Khwezi: yes Mbali had a miscarriage.

She covered her mouth with her hands and started tearing up.

Khwezi: nawe Mbali after this I want us to move on. Ok so let's start over. Mom meet Mbali my girlfriend and Mbali meet my mom.

Khwezi can be stupid at times I wanted to laugh but tried hard not to because he was serious and when I turned to his mom, she was wiping tears from her face.

She got up to hug me.

K.mom: I'm so sorry about your loss.

Me: I'm ok.

K.mom: I'm sorry for the way I treated you.

Me: it's fine.

She let go then looked at me. This was weird.

She called the maid to bring goodies and we just sat together. Khwezi talking to his mom and me being included here and there but it was okay now.

[05/14, 13:51] Mk: Insert 22

.

After 4 we left. I wouldn't say I trust her fully yet, I know women like her. They act like they care then stab you when you least expect it and you won't even know that it was them because you're close.

Khwezi: are you going home?

Me: ewe I've got church tomorrow.

Khwezi: haibo baby so soon. Akho neso sleepover?

Me: xolo kalok.

Khwezi: on the bright side. Monday I'm working from home.

Me: ok ke.

We drive to my place and finally arrive and he parks outside.

Me: my dad is home.

Khwezi: I'm not scared of him anymore.

Me: yazi ndifuna aku bethe.

Khwezi: he knows I'd knock him out.

I laugh and he joins in. We kiss and it takes longer than expected. I try to pull away but he pulls me back in.

A car hoots and we finally stop after some time. It's Libo so I don't really care.

Me: bye now.

Khwezi: Libo uyadika.

We kiss one last time and I leave. I walk in through the lounge and Libo walks in through the kitchen.

Libo: hayi ke la girl. Someone got it all today.

Me: Libongwe sudika.

Libo: sorry for interrupting your moment.

Me: we were done already.

Libo: hee hayi ke Mrs Ngoma.

Me: Libo leave me alone.

He laughs and we walk upstairs. I get to my room and fall asleep immediately. Amanda wakes me up for supper and we both walk downstairs.

Nathan: are you sure you're not pregnant?

I give him a straight face.

Me: Nathan don't start.

Libo: and you had it all today.

I roll my eyes then serve myself.

Nathan: and he eating habits.

Dad: Libo and Nathan don't you dare.

I smile then stick my tongue out.

I have my meal then take the dishes to the kitchen and wash them. I walk back to my bedroom and sleep immediately. The meds are taking its course.

The next morning I wake up and go to church. I'm the only person that goes to church in this house. After church I drive back home. We have supper as a family and the I know the next day is the last for my rest.

I fall asleep immediately. Lately I've been sleeping a lot.

I wake up the next day and get dressed. Have my breakfast and chill in the lounge.

Amanda: are you going somewhere?

Me: Vincent.

Amanda: shopping?

Me: yes, I need new clothes.

Amanda: ok.

At 11 I leave and drive to Vincent. Buy a couple of clothes then go to Mugg and Bean for lunch. As my order arrives this guy opens the chair.

Guy: can I join you?

Me: sure.

He was more of an average guy. Not too much, like the guys I've seen.

Guy: I'm Sibulelo by the way.

Me: Sethu.

Thats me, if I'm not really interested, I give you my second name. I have my meal while he's asking me weird questions. I have my meds right after.

Sbu: so can I have your number?

I just decide to give him Nathans number.

Sbu: sure ke.

I go to my car and suddenly I feel drowsy so I drive to Khwezi's place since it's closer. I open

the gate then I notice his helper is home.

Her: molo sisi.

Me: molo ma.

Her: use study.

Then I only remembered then that he said he'd be home. I walk to the study and there's documents, files and papers all over.

Me: Guess whose home.

He looks up and carries on.

Khwezi: close the door.

I close the door and sit opposite him. There's a finance file from his club in front of me. I'm passionate about accounting so I open the file and go through everything and I realize it's not adding up.

Me: baby?

Khwezi: mhh?

Me: ndijonge.

He smiles then looks at me.

Me: who does your finance?

Khwezi: some guy.

Me: do you realize he's ripping you off?

Khwezi: kwintoni?

Me: the invoices and paper work he did don't balance. He probably took money for himself.

Khwezi: I should hire you mos.

Me: no thanks.

Khwezi: come on, I trust you and I know you would never lie to me plus I'll pay you well.

Me: noo.

We argue about this till he finally decides to let me win but knowing Khwezi he won't drop it.

Me: masambe siyo lala.

Khwezi: I'm working on a very important case.

Me: you can do that later.

He carries on with the work he was doing.

Me: Khwezi please don't ignore me.

Ndiyakucela. Please babe. Or you can stay with me till I fall asleep then come back to work.

I pout and I know he would never say no.

Khwezi: uyatefa kodwa.

He gets up and we walk to his bedroom and he puts me to bed, telling me stories then I finally fall asleep.

I wake up and it's already dark. Khwezi is working next to me.

Khwezi: finally.

I smile. I check the time and it's after 7, I'm definitely not driving home.

Me: please call my dad and tell him I'm not coming home.

He smiles and gets on the phone almost immediately. After the whole hospital saga he's

been cool about Khwezi, not that I'm complaining but I just wished things could remain that way.

He orders in and we have supper in bed. I'm dessert.

.

So it's Thursday afternoon and I'm in my dad's office, I was supposed to be at work but I felt like letting go. I just didn't have it in me to work. It was tiring, especially now that it was something I wasn't passionate about.

Dad: so what are you saying?

Me: I'm resigning.

Dad: and what are you going to do with your life?

Me: I don't know.

He gives me a disapproving look.

Dad: I won't let that happen.

Me: ok don't you have work for me here, or ask

your friends to hire me.

Dad: Khwezi told me about the offer

Me: I won't work for Khwezi.

Dad: then I have nothing. You're too picky, people would die for that job.

Me: I would take the job if it was someone else just not him.

Dad: he's hardly at the club.

Me: fine. I'll think about it. You called me here for something else.

Dad: yes baby. I was thinking about you changing your surname.

I wouldn't mind but it's a complete waste of time and energy.

Me: it's just a couple of years and I might get married. I know I'm a Collins.

Dad: we need to make it official.

Me: I'll talk to my mom Saturday.

He nods. I drive home later on and all of a sudden I'm feeling nauseous, it's probably something I ate. I get home, drink my pills and go to bed...

[05/14, 13:51] Mk: Insert 23

.

I woke up at around 6 and I walked downstairs. The whole family was in the lounge.

Dad: Mbali are you sure you're okay?

Me: yeah

Nathan: you're not okay. All you do is sleep.

Me: it's probably the medication.

Amanda: we need to see the doctor.

Me: I swear I'm okay.

I sit down and go through my phone then I realize I've neglected my friends. I know I was sick but I needed to pay attention to them to and I didn't so I called Buhle. She'd bring life to

my boring life.

Buhle: are you okay?

Me: ewe ndi right Buhle.

Buhle: The last time I got a call from you, you were in hospital.

Me: I'm ok I just miss you.

I walk to the kitchen since they are all looking at me.

Buhle: we miss you too.

Me: I know I've neglected you guys and I want to make up for it.

Buhle: nini?

Me: how about I take you guys out for lunch tomorrow?

Buhle: that's fine with me. I'll call Siba.

Me: no love it's fine. I'll do it myself.

We say our goodbyes then I pour juice for

myself and I walk to the lounge. We watch the news and I'm just bored so I talk to Siba. After our little chat we have supper and I don't really have an appetite so I just have salads. I watch movies till late because I can't sleep. When I don't take my meds I feel like my normal self and when I do I just feel like a zombie. My whole body tired and I feel like my spirit is leaving my body. So from there I decide to never take the pills again.

I go to bed at 3, not because I'm drowsy but there's nothing to watch. As I walk upstairs I hear the door open so I wait to see who it is. And to my surprise it's my dad. I am so confused.

Me: oh its you.

Dad: and why aren't you in bed?

Me: I'm not tired.

He gets closer and he smells like blood.

Me: you smell like blood.

Dad: do I?

He takes off his shirt and walks to the laundry.

So not only does he do all these illegal dealings but he also kills people.

I walk upstairs before he can return. I listen to Anthony Hamilton till I fall asleep.

I wake up the next day. Take a bath. I wear my jeans with red heels. Body suit and black coat.

I fix my hair then I head down to breakfast. It's already 11. So I make a smootie then leave.

Today I decide to drive my dads car, BMW 320i. I drive to Vincent and do a little shopping then I obviously have to go fetch Siba.

She gets in the car and screams.

Siba: is it yours?

Me: I wish.

Siba: Khwezi?

Me: haibo Siba uyazazi iimoto zika Khwezi nje.
It's my dads.

Siba: and you didn't want to give him a chance.

Me: it's not that I didn't want to but it felt weird.

We arrive in Vincent and Buhle is already waiting. We order milkshakes to start off the lunch.

Buhle: so how have you been?

Me: I've been better. And you guys?

Buhle: good just missed you.

Me: I'm here now.

Siba: so hows the family doing?

Me: they are fine.

Buhle: ubuya nini uEnzo?

Me: I'm fetching her tomorrow.

Siba: khona since you resigned what are you going to do?

Me: I don't know. Maybe work for my dad or for Khwezi.

Buhle: and why aren't you doing that?

Me: I haven't decided yet.

Siba: your dad is too controlling, rather work for Khwezi.

Me: I'm still thinking.

We order then afterwards I pay the bill and drop them off then I drive back home. I am tired from all the shopping.

.

The next day Khwezi offers to drive me to Queenstown. I would have preferred Libo but since he offered I decided why not. So early in the morning I receive a call from Siya.

Me: Siya.

Siya: mamakhe, unjani?

Me: good you?

Siya: fantastic. When are you fetching Enzo?

Me: I'm about to take a bath right now.

Siya: ok. I heard you fired the nanny.

Me: yes.

Siya: why?

Me: I moved into the family home and we have a helper here.

He didn't know about my dad.

Siya: family home?

Me: yes.

Siya: whose family?

Me: mine.

He let's out a sigh of relief and I know he is relieved for whatever reason.

We talk about Enzo for some time and finally hang up. I go shower then get dressed. I walk downstairs for breakfast then wait for Khwezi.

He fetches me at 10 and we drive off.

Khwezi: so have you decided yet?

Me: no.

Khwezi: it's a simple yes or no.

Me: working for you makes me feel super small.
You will have so much power over me.

Khwezi: that's not true and you know it.

Me: what benefits will I get?

Khwezi: you can work from home. Petrol card
and an allowance.

Me: allowance?

Khwezi: yes. You will get your income plus
allowance.

Me: ok fine but I start in August.

Khwezi: these are the reasons I love you so
much. So I was thinking, how about we go to
Cape Town for the weekend?

Me: which weekend?

Khwezi: next week.

Me: ok but you're paying.

He chuckles. I don't want to waste money or use it unnecessarily.

Khwezi: fine with me.

We continue chatting about everything then finally arrive and I direct him to my place. He parks and I knock and we walk in. My mom appears, already dressed looking like a queen as always.

Me: mommy dearest.

Mom: my love unjani?

Me: perfect.

Mom: and wena Khwezi?

Khwezi: I'm good ma.

Enzo is so excited to see me. I leave her with Khwezi then go to the bedroom with my mom.

We have to talk about the surname thing.
Raymond said he didn't mind paying for
anything that needed to be paid for.

Mom: whats up?

Me: Raymond wants me to change my surname.

Mom: and?

Me: I need your permission plus he has to pay.

Mom: I'm glad you know that. He can speak to
me or call my uncles. It will cost him a lot,
umdala ngoku.

Me: he said he doesn't mind paying.

Mom: mhh haike I'm glad to hear that. How are
you recovering from the miscarriage?

Me: I'm not responding well to the medication
so I stopped taking that but I'm ok.

She has a concerned look. My mom is a nurse
so she would know.

Mom: and why don't you see a doctor?

Me: I will.

We walk out and it's really awkward having Khwezi and my mom in the same room so we leave driving back to East London. The only thing I'm looking forward to is the trip to Cape Town. I haven't been on holiday in a while. So we arrive in East London and Khwezi drops us off.

Me: can I ask?

He nods.

Me: what type of work does my dad do?

Khwezi: why don't you ask him?

Me: you know how he is.

Khwezi: and you want him to kill me for telling you?

Me: he won't know.

Khwezi: like the time you told him you know about the work I do?

Me: that just slipped. It was an honest mistake.

Khwezi: he does everything I do.

Me: does he kill people?

Khwezi: you can ask him.

Me: secrets are bad for a relationship. Please just tell me.

Khwezi: yes he does.

So he said, "he does everything I do" that only means Khwezi does the same.

Me: so you also kill people?

Khwezi: only when I have to.

Me: wow.

I walk out. Take all the bags and tries to explain. There is honestly nothing to explain. You kill people for a living and I'm supposed to feel safe being around someone like that. Maybe my dad was right. I don't know Khwezi and he's not the one for me. I take the bags snd open the door

for Enzo and stays folding her arms.

Me: Enzokuhle phuma!!

She shakes her head.

Me: fine.

I won't take any of her nonsense so I carry her and starts to cry. We get inside and I close the door. She throws herself on the floor and cries like the brat that she is.

I don't care either way. She will not spend the day with a murderer. Her and Khwezi are close, it scares me sometimes.

Amanda: umenzani umntana?

Me: nothing.

I pour myself a glass of wine and just watch Amanda trying to calm her down..

[05/14, 13:52] Mk: Insert 24

.

When Enzo has calmed down I walk to my

bedroom and unpack her stuff. I know she has her own room but I would still prefer she sleeps with me till she turns 5 at least.

My door swings open and its Libo.

Libo: Mbali we need to talk

Me: what is it?

Khwezi walks in and he closes the door.

I roll my eyes dramatically. It's weird how most of my family is so close with him.

Me: thetha.

Libo: do you have to be so dramatic?

Me: what did I do now?

Libo: I just spoke to Khwezi about something you did. Why unje Mbali? Do you know irritating nagging is. Khwezi will lose interest in you because of the nagging and your drama.

Me: what did I do?

Libo: don't act stupid with me.

Me: ohh.

Libo: at least he's honest with you. I for one have never come clean to anyone about what I do and I'm not planning to.

I didn't know Libo also did what they do. Its so unlike him.

Me: ok so what do you want me to do?

Libo: listen to Khwezi. Understand he has to make a living. If it were me I'd probably leave you right now but he didn't because he loves you. Get yourself together.

He walks out and leaves me with Khwezi, which is so awkward.

Khwezi: so am I forgiven?

Me: I think so.

Khwezi: good then. Come here.

I walk closer to him and he kisses the life out of me. He pulls out.

Khwezi: I really love you but sometimes you're just too much like now, moving forward I want us to communicate rather than you always walking out on me.

I nod. Khwezi is full of surprises, I can't really promise him that but I'll try.

I walk him out and he leaves. We can't spend the day together anymore. It's already tense so it won't work out.

Enzo walks in and she is upset.

Me: xolo vha sthandwa sam.

Enzo: ok.

She's always forgiving.

We go have lunch together then we watch movies.

.

Friday morning, I start packing. We leave at 18:00. Anda is dropping us off. After packing I

have my breakfast, still in my pj's. Libo took Enzo to school earlier.

Amanda: you must be excited.

Me: sort of.

Amanda: I'm sure you're going to enjoy yourselves.

Me: I hope so.

At 11 I go to Vincent to get my hair and nails done. I look stunning. Since its our weekend away I go to Truworths to buy lingerie. I spoil myself with lunch then I decide to fetch Enzo. I need to see my daughter before we leave. We drive home at around 3.

Enzo: uzohamba?

Me: ewe baby ndizo buya Monday.

Enzo: iyho. Utata uzoza?

Me: ha.a uzombona next week.

Enzo: fine.

Me: you'll have fun with uncle Libo and Nathan.
No tamkhulu no khulu ukhona.

Enzo: uBuhle yena?

Me: ndizothi aze vha?

She nods and I call Buhle immediately.

Buhle: have you decided to stay?

I giggle.

Me: no. Enzo wants to spend the day with you tomorrow.

Buhle: oh my gosh that's so cute. And how are we going to do that.

Me: uhm I'll drop my car off at your place just now and you can use it for the weekend.

Buhle: ok I'll see you now now.

Me: ok

We hang up and I pack my suitcase in my car.
Text Khwezi and tell him to fetch me at Amalinda and he agrees.

I say my goodbyes to my daughter and Amanda. The guys aren't home yet so I leave. Traffic is hectic since it's late. I get to Amalinda and Buhle is so happy to see me.

Buhle: how excited are you?

Me: too much.

We chat over drinks then Khwezi tells me he's outside. I walk to the car with my bags and I greet the both of them and we leave.

Anda: yazi we had plans no Khwezi for this weekend. If you want to cancel the trip there's still time.

Me: and why would I cancel?

Anda: maybe he irritates you.

Me: I enjoy that though.

We arrive at the airport and we check in then board our plane. The minute we get in I fall asleep on his chest. I've been on my feet the whole day. He wakes me up when we are about

to arrive. Some weird looking guy is already waiting for us.

Me: whose he?

Khwezi: Stix.

They handshake and he gives him car keys. We walk to a white Audi RS 5. I get in while he out our luggage in the boot. Its already late.

Khwezi: I am so tired.

Me: me too.

Khwezi: excuse me? Ubulele wena.

Me: because I hardly slept last night.

Khwezi: right.

He says that sarcastically. I hit him playfully.

Khwezi: ndibethelwa ntoni mna? Because I'm agreeing with you.

Me: nice.

We arrive at the Southern Sun, Waterfront hotel.

We check in then order supper. I'm already hungry. It's nearly 9 and all I can think of is the bed. I am super tired.

We have our supper then we go shower together. The minute he touches me my whole body shivers. He kisses my neck then nibbles on my ear, I can feel his erection on my butt. His one hand is holding my boob while his other is busy on my cookie. I want turn around but he hold me tight in position. I just moan. I feel an orgasm build up so I just hold onto his arm and I release. He turns me around and enters me while we are both still standing. He looks me deep in my eyes, still pounding me. I scream, I moan, my legs are jiggly and I can't stand anymore. He notices so he picks me up and places me against the wet shower wall. He goes deeper each time. I can't hold it anymore so I release and he follows shortly afterwards. He walks out, still carrying me. Places me on the bed then we make love till we are both tired

and can't take it anymore. I fall asleep immediately.

I wake up in the morning and I am extremely tired. Khwezi is not next to me so I go shower so long then wear my black bodycon dress and heels. He walks in as I'm about to order breakfast.

Khwezi: good morning to you too.

Me: morning. And where have you been?

Khwezi: I had business to take care of. I'm sorry.

He gets closer and kisses my cheek.

Me: it's fine. I was about to order breakfast.

Khwezi: go ahead.

I order breakfast for two and by the time it arrives he is already clean and dressed in black also. We dig in then we leave. It's not too hot outside but it's ok. There's a bit of sun. We drive to Waterfront and start with shopping.

Khwezi: you can buy anything I don't mind.

This was the first I've actually spent his money and it felt weird. I still felt uncomfortable doing it.

Me: no love it's fine.

Khwezi: Mbali please don't do this to me. Allow me to spoil you.

I finally give in but buy a few clothes. Then we go for lunch. We have a helicopter ride so we take all the shopping bags to the car and we walk to the helicopter. I'm nervous at first but later feel relaxed. Khwezi has my hand in his.

Khwezi: how are you feeling?

Me: I'm ok now.

He smiles then lets go of my hand.

Khwezi: look at the view from the top.

I look down and I can't believe my eyes when I see a "Will you marry me?" flag at the shore of

the beach with people holding it. I don't want to jump to conclusion so I look at him and he has a velvet box in his hand with a silver ring with a huge rock. I suddenly get emotional.

Khwezi: I know you'll think it's too soon but I don't need more time because I know my heart belongs to you. So please make me the happiest man and agree to be my wife.

I so badly want to respond but I'm just so emotional with tears all over my face and me wiping them. I've only been with him for 4 months and I have never thought this would happen.

I nod a few times.

Me: yes Khwezi.

He smiles then slips in the ring in my finger and kisses me. I love Khwezi so much but never have I thought he'd propose. He once told me he wanted to settle down but I didn't know it was with me. I am so excited but scared too.

I'm still 24 and I have no clue what marriage life has in store for me..

We land and just roam around Waterfront for a while. I want to go to Robben Island but it's too late. It's nearly 5.

Khwezi: so when are we getting married ?

Me: ha Khwezi, you just proposed a few hours ago.

Khwezi: ok then when do you want it to be.

Me: I think about it.

Khwezi: soon.

I giggle.

His phone rings and he answers. He talks for what seems like forever then hangs up.

Khwezi: baby, I am so sorry but duty calls.

Me: duty?

Khwezi: yes. Theres a package I'm fetching from the airport.

Me: what package?

Khwezi: diamonds.

I nod and we walk to the car and he leaves me at the hotel. I want to surprise him so I take a shower. Lotion my body then wear my black lingerie. It looks good on me, so I take a few pictures and send it to him. He should be home sooner. And just as I predicted, 20 minutes later he's back. I only wait for him to close the door and we start off the kiss innocently, it quickly tenses with my hands roaming his upper body and his on my butt. Passion took over and he started to rub my thighs causing moans to escape. He takes off my lingerie like its nothing and within seconds I'm butt naked. His lips are all over my nipples. He gently places me on the bed and he's also naked after a few minutes. My hands went down to his fully erected dick and he moans and bites my neck. He enters me but doesn't move. He positions himself.

Me: baby?

Khwezi: mhh?

Me: I want you to have me all to yourself.

He humps me and I just moan in pleasure. He goes slower.

Me: don't stop.

I wrap my legs around him lifting my hips off the bed. He goes faster till we both climax. He does not let me rest he goes in time and time again, hitting the right spot. I orgasm again and this time I'm on top, pinning him against the bed, I go for a good 2 minutes and before I'm done he flips me over and now he's on top. With each thrust he goes deeper and deeper. I am dripping wet, he comes and collapses on top of me.

I am exhausted but more in love with this idiot on top of me...

[05/14, 13:52] Mk: Insert 25

.

I woke up to the smell of bacon the next day. I'm not a huge fan but today I couldn't wait to get my hands on it. I got up and Khwezi was getting dressed.

Me: morning.

Khwezi: Mrs Ngoma.

Me: not yet.

I walked to the bathroom and freshened up then I walked back to the bedroom.

Khwezi: come let's eat. We're going to see my sister.

I walk to where he is seated and I start with the bacon.

Me: please do me a favour.

Khwezi: mmh?

Me: ndicela i bacon yakho.

I smile and he looks at me weirdly then finally agrees. I have the rest of my breakfast then I go

shower. It's drizzling outside so I wear my jeans and ankle boot. With my fur coat.

Me: lets go.

Khwezi: awumhle nje.

Me: thanks.

We walk to the car and drive to Durbanville. I've never met his other sister. We arrive and he parks. Its a beautiful house, big too. We get out and he knocks. She appears looking dazzling. She looks so much like Khwezi and Chuma but she looks more mature with her weave.

Aphiw: oh my God big brother.

They hug for the long time ever. She hugs me too.

Aphiwe: you must be Mbali.

I smile.

Me: Aphiwe?

Aphiwe: yes.

She smiles. She's so beautiful.

We get in and the house is beautiful. It's goals.

Aphiwe: juice or coffee?

Khwezi: juice for the both of us.

She goes to the kitchen and comes back with grape juice. Aphiwe is 24, a few months older than me. She's studying Medicine at the University of Cape Town.

Aphiwe: what if bendingekho. Njembe ufika unnaounced.

Khwezi: I was going to break in.

Aphiwe: and I trust you. Uyi pro kwelo cala. Mbali if you ever think of locking him out you have another thing coming.

I giggle and take a sip of my juice.

Aphiwe: oh my God. Khwezi did you propose?

She gets closer and touched my hand. She is suddenly emotional.

Khwezi: yes.

Aphiwe: ayintle. Khwezi when did it happen?

Khwezi: yesterday.

Aphiwe: what if I didn't approve?

Khwezi: I knew you would.

They laugh. We spend half the day there then at 3 we left.

Me: I feel like hot wings.

Khwezi: KFC?

Me: ewe.

We drive to the nearest KFC and he buys 16 wings. I haven't even spoken to any of my friends or family and I decided to keep it like that.

We get to the the hotel and I dig in.

Khwezi: we have to talk.

Me: about?

Khwezi: keep an open mind.

I was starting to get nervous. He's never been this serious.

Khwezi: I've been thinking, since we'll probably be getting married soon and baby I don't want anything to stop that. So I was thinking maybe we should start using protection. And at least start planning a family afterwards.

Me: ok.

Khwezi: I hope I'm not offended you in any way.

Me: no I understand. Plus I also wouldn't want another baby so soon.

He knows my fertility calendar so this weekend won't be a problem.

We kiss and after eating my wings I go take a nap.

.

So Monday afternoon we leave Cape Town. Its

too soon but it had to happen. We arrive in East London few hours later and Anda is there to fetch us. I go fetch my daughter first. I missed her.

Enzo: mommy awumhle.

Anda: she's so cute.

Me: enkosi.

Khwezi: should I drop you off?

Me: yes please.

I'm very jealous but today I was a bit too much. He was going on and on with Anda and that irritated me. They dropped me off at my place and I just walked out.

Khwezi: and now?

Me: nothing. I'm just tired.

He has a concerned look but I just ignore him. Take my bags and walk in. My car is back so I'm glad. I'm seriously not in the mood.

Me: I'm home.

Libo and Amanda are home.

Amanda: wow you're glowing. Nje nge weekend.

Me: that's not true.

Libo: you actually are. Uyi upcoming yellow bone.

I just smile.

Libo: futhi we need to talk.

Me: about?

Libo: your friend.

Amanda: wena nama ntombazana.

Me: I know.

I walk upstairs. I am super tired....

[05/14, 13:52] Mk: Continuation..

.

After my nap I walk downstairs and I am feeling good

Everything seems to be going perfectly. It after 5 and I have so many missed calls from Khwezi and I won't return his calls. As I walk out my phone rings and its Zimkitha.

Me: hey

Zim: I heard about the engagement, congratulations

.

Me: thank you.

Zim: so when are we going out to celebrate?

Me: I've got no idea. I have a new job so I want to settle in first.

Zim: oh that's ok my love. We'll gladly throw you a great Bachelorette party.

I giggle.

Me: I'd be glad.

Zim: I'll see you soon then.

Me: ok bye.

I walk downstairs and find the whole family in the lounge.

Me: hello family.

Dad: someone is in a good mood.

Me: I am.

I sit in between Amanda and Libo.

Nathan: so how was Cape Town?

Me: it was great thanks.

My phone rings and its Khwezi so I ignore it. I just hate it when he's up in my face all the time. I need to breathe too.

Amanda: hayi Mbali. When were you going to tell us?

Me: about?

Amanda: the engagement.

She took my hand and admired the ring.

Libo: wow uKhwezi uya shesha.

Dad: I'm glad he's doing the right thing.

Me: yeah me too.

Libo starts interrogating me about Buhle. I would never hurt my friend like that. Libo is bad news.

But I won't be a cockbloker so I gave him her numbers and he did what he does best. They have a little thing going on. It's not a relationship yet, just flirting here and there but that doesn't stop Libo from bringing in girls.

.

So I started working for Khwezi. I go to the club 3 times a week and I spend the rest of my week at home. We've been distant. Weird right? We talk but it's not like before or maybe I'm just being a nuisance and I want him all to myself? All we talk about is work, the wedding and lobola. There is no us. I don't want to seem like the nagging girlfriend/

fiancée so I let him be. So it's mid August and I haven't been feeling well, my moods started changing, my eating habits aren't the same, I've gained so much weight. I guess its because I'm happy where my life is at the moment. But I didn't want to let it slide so I went to the doctor and just as I expected, I'm 7 weeks pregnant. That's almost 2 months and I knew nothing about it. The symptoms were there but I chose to ignore them. I couldn't tell Khwezi because he made it clear he didn't want a baby yet, so I wasn't going to bother him or anyone for that matter.

Since its after 12 I decide not to go to work, it's already late plus I'm not ok. So I call Libo.

Libo: baby sis.

Me: uhm Libo could you please fetch Enzo for me.

Libo: now?

Me: no later, I'm not feeling well so I'll lie down a

bit.

Libo: do you want me to bring you anything?

Me: no I'm ok.

Libo: ok.

He sounded like he was worried but I wasn't going to tell anyone. I drive home and I'm tears, maybe it's the hormones. I get home and immediately walk to my bedroom and I lock. I look myself in the mirror and I feel miserable. I'm carrying a baby and it's father won't know about it and the worst part is the doctor told me I would probably have complications because of the treatment I got.

I look at my stomach and nothing is visible yet but I no longer have my flat stomach.

I take a nap. My phone rings, I answer without looking at the caller ID.

Me: hello.

Caller: Mbali.

It's Khwezi, I suddenly feel guilty.

Me: mhh.

Khwezi: why weren't you at work?

Me: I was busy.

Khwezi: you should have called.

Me: I'm sorry.

Khwezi: please don't use our relationship to your advantage.

Me: what relationship Khwezi? Ubona i relationship wena?

Khwezi: what do you mean?

Me: I mean exactly that. You can give me a warning like all your other employees.

I hang up before he continues. I am just angry at everything and everyone. How am I going to explain this to my parents.

I have to act normal so no one suspects anything so I call Zim. She's been wanting to go

out for a while now plus it's Friday.

Zim: what a lovely surprise.

Me: I know. I need good company.

Zim: siyaphi?

Me: I don't know. I'll call my other friends and ask.

Zim: sure.

I hang up and call Siba, she always has plans, she tells me about a chill sesh Luzuko is hosting. And for the first time I don't mind. I'm even surprised they're still together.

.

Later that night I drive off to Luzuko's place. Zim is already there. Buhle is somewhere with Libo.

Siba: wena wonke uphume?

Me: I just needed to breathe

Zim: are you and Khwezi okay?

Me: yeah.

Zim: ok.

They drink their shots and cider while I just drink grape juice.

Siba: you and juice?

Me: I'm driving remember?

Zim: a cider won't any harm.

Me: I don't want to get tipsy.

They look at me then finally let me drink my juice while they get drunk...

[05/14, 13:52] Mk: Insert 26

.

My night has to come to an end quickly.

Siba: it's not even mid night yet.

Me: I'm tired plus I have to take Enzo out tomorrow.

Zim: I'll leave with you then.

Siba: anisa diki.

Me: says the girl who's going to sleep here.

She giggles and both Zim and I walk out. We hug and she goes to her car and I go to mine. I want to drive to Khwezi but we are not in good terms plus I don't want to show up unannounced at this time. It's nearly 11, uzocinga ntoni ngam. So I drive home as late as it is, hoping I get there safe. I get home and park my car. I decide to walk in through the lounge. Libo and Buhle are cuddling watching movies.

Me: molweni.

Buhle: I came to see you, where have you been?

I giggle.

Me: lies lies. Enjoy yourselves, I'm off to bed.

I walk to bed and my baby is not there, she's probably with Nathan or my parents. I change to my pjs and doze off immediately.

The next morning I wake up at 7, I have to take Enzo out because the next is her birthday. And I can't really take her out on a Sunday. I can't believe she's turning 3 already. I take a shower and wear my gown. She walks in rushing.

Enzo: oh mommy you're back.

Me: yes my love.

Enzo: sizoya emall?

Me: ewe but breakfast first.

Enzo: I had cereal with uncle Nathan.

Me: ok I'll run a bath for you vha?

She nods and I go run a bath for her. I leave her in the bathroom while I lotion myself. I look at tummy and rub it a bit.

Me: hey baby, I hope you're okay. Just hang in there, everything will be fine soon just you watch.

Someone ckears their throat and it's only then

that I realize the door was open. I look over and its Nathan.

Nathan: am I disturbing?

Me: no.

Nathan: are you pregnant?

Me: please promise not to tell anyone.

He narrowed his eyebrows.

Nathan: why is it a secret?

Me: I am scared. Khwezi and I aren't in good terms, and he made it clear he doesn't want a baby just yet. You know how your dad is.

Nathan: how long are planning on keeping it a secret?

I sit down and he comes to sit next to me.

Me: I don't know Nathan I'm just scared okay?

Nathan: I think you should tell Khwezi. He has every right to know. And as for dad he'll have to deal with it, you're old enough now.

I nod.

Nathan: and don't worry I won't tell anyone.

He holds me and kisses my forehead. I really needed this, someone to reassure me that everything would be fine.

He leaves and I go check on Enzo and she is enjoying herself. I help bath her then we get dressed in denim and white and we head down to breakfast. She has a yogurt since she already ate and I have a full English breakfast. I'm not full but I won't have anymore, I don't want anyone being suspicious. Enzo and I leave at 11 and we head to Hemingways. It's just the two of us and I feel complete. Khwezi hasn't even tried to contact me since Friday afternoon.

We first go shopping for the both of us then we go watch a movie. It has to be cartoons and I enjoy it. After the movies we head to Wimpy for lunch.

Enzo: mama, utata uza nini?

Me: ngomso. After church.

Enzo: yey. Uphi uKhwezi?

That hits a nerve.

Me: use ndlini yakhe. He's busy with work.

She nods and drinks her milkshake. I pay the bill and we head to our last stop, Electric Avenue. She spends the rest of her day there and I just watch her enjoy herself.

We drive home at 5 and I'm craving carrot cake so I drive to Woolworths and buy myself cake then we head home. The whole family is home which is weird. It's a Saturday after all.

Me: molweni.

They greet back and I walk upstairs with a fork. Enzo stays downstairs with the family. I lock my bedroom door and dig in.

My phone rings and it's Siya.

Me: hello.

Siya: hey. Unjani?

Me: I'm good you?

Siya: great. Uh when can I fetch Enzo?

Me: I'll bring her after church.

Siya: ah I'm not sure my wife will accept that.

Me: so I can't bring her over but you can fetch her. Your wife needs to know I'm Enzo's mother and whenever she's involved I'll pop up. I'll bring Enzo over and you can bring her back. I'm sure you know the way by now.

Siya: yeah.

Me: good then.

I hang up and carry on eating my cake. It tastes better than all the other times.

I unlock the door then go throw away the plastics and I join the family in the lounge. We have supper and I help to wash the dishes.

.

The next morning I wake up and both Enzo and I go take a bath. I sing for her and she just blushes. She wears her black jeans with pumps and a white top and denim jacket.

I wear a flowy dress, I don't want anything tight, my tummy might show.

We go downstairs for breakfast and I start feeling nauseous. I feed Enzo then I just pour muesli, I'll eat it when I get to church. We drive to church and we're early. My phone rings while I'm still driving and it's Khwezi. I am so shocked.

Me: hello. Uhm I'm driving.

Khwezi: is Enzo with you?

Me: ewe.

Khwezi: please give her the phone.

I do as told and watch my daughter giggle and blush till the end of the phone call. We arrive at church and I start to eat in the car then when church is about to start we move in. As always

church is great. I have so much fun and nearly forget about my problems. After church I decide I need to go see Khwezi and we discuss what is happening between us, the sudden drift. I never forced him to propose.

I drive to Siya's place and his wife is at the door before I even park. I remember viewing this house and being told it would be "ours" but he knew exactly what he was doing. I'm not complaining though. Enzo and I walk to the door and she is looking at me with a very disgusted look. I don't even care one bit.

Me: molo Lelethu.

She fakes a smile.

Lelethu: Mbali.

Me: is Siya home?

I would never leave my daughter with her.

Lelethu: yes.

He appears from behind her.

Siya: oh hey Mbali.

Me: hey.

I squat down to Enzo and hug her.

Me: mommy loves you vha. I'll see you later.

Enzo: love you too.

She kisses me and I get up and walk to my car and drive to Khwezi's place. I use my remote to open the gate then I park and I decide to knock. It would be rude for me to just barge in after such a long time.

I knock and stand by the door for some time, a girl opens, dressed in his shirt. And immediately my heart breaks into a million pieces, my knees get weak.

Girl: can I help you?

She has an attitude for days. And I make a promise that I won't break down in front of her.

Me: is Khwezi home?

Girl: Khwezi!! Baby!!

He appears still getting dressed and I know I disturbed something.

He looks shocked to see me. I am frozen, I don't know why I'm even still standing here.

Khwezi: uh baby I am so sorry. I can explain, it's not what it looks like.

Girl: Khwezi uthini?

Khwezi: please just get your stuff and leave.

The girl just stands there.

Khwezi: now!!

She moves and Khwezi pulls me inside. I can't even think. I don't know what to do. He sits me in the lounge then disappears and comes back with this girl and she has a weekender bag, and that could only mean she's been here the whole weekend. He walks her out and comes back to me and it's only then that tears just flood my eyes. They flow like a river.

Khwezi: Mbali I am so sorry. I wasn't thinking straight.

Me: please take me home.

I couldn't drive in this state.

Khwezi: can I explain?

Me: Khwezi please just take me home. Please.

He goes upstairs and comes back and he drives while I sit at the back. Anthony Hamilton- Pray for me, is playing on the radio. It may be one of my favourite songs but today it irritates me.

The minute it ends I decide to stop crying. He stops a few houses away from mine.

Me: Khwezi I think we moved to fast, I don't think we're ready to settle down. We haven't had a proper conversation in 2 weeks. I don't want to force matters so let's just take a break from each other.

I try to take off his ring but he holds my hand.

Khwezi: don't. We're supposed to be fixing this and not taking breaks. My family will be meeting with your family soon. What will you tell them.

Me: that you cheated.

Khwezi: it was an accident. Mbali you kept pushing me away. You have your mood swings what was I supposed to do?

Me: you were supposed to talk to me Khwezi but you couldn't wait to play Mr Panty dropper.

Khwezi: I'm sorry babe and I promise you it won't happen again.

Me: and how will I know that?

Khwezi: by learning to trust me again.

Me: I don't know Khwezi.

It's awkwardly quiet so I get out and walk home. He'll bring my car whenever he feels like it. I need to be alone...

[05/14, 13:53] Mk: Insert 27

.

2 weeks go by and Khwezi agreed to give me space after a lot of convincing. I love Khwezi with everything in me but I needed time to heal. I can't be hurting myself like this and I needed to think about my baby. I was starting to show and it was scary. I wasn't ready to tell anyone. I know Khwezi had every right to know but I wanted us to be in a good space before I tell him. I didn't want it to seem like I'm using the baby as a tool to get back together with him.

So it's a Monday and I'm working from the club. It's September and it's starting to get warm but I have to wear something that covers up. One of the buyers enters my office. Apparently he's been a loyal customer since the beginning.

Me: Vuyo!

Vuyo: Boss lady how are you?

I frown. I hate it when he calls me that.

Me: it's Monday, don't.

He chuckles.

Vuyo: I just came to see how you're doing.

Me: I know Khwezi sent you.

Vuyo: I came for a morning bang, why would I go past Khwezi?

Me: I know you would never just check on me.

Vuyo: well I just did.

Me: great.

He chuckles then shakes his head and walks away. I suddenly feel a bit light. I never feel comfortable around the buyers, I mean why would someone pay so much money just to have sex. But who am I to judge, my boyfriend owns the place and who knows what was going through his head when he thought of the idea.

I carry on working, counting the weekends profit and as always there's a great increase.

It's lunch and I'm meeting with Siba. I miss my best friend plus we've been distant lately well only because I don't want her finding out about the pregnancy but today I decide to come clean. I drive to Vincent, we'll be meeting at Milky Lane. I feel like lots of ice cream. She arrives a few minutes after me.

Siba: whats the occasion?

I get up to hug her. She was the first person I told about my first pregnancy.

Me: it's spring and ice cream would do us good.

Siba: mhh.

She sits down and both have ice cream then after we'd go to Steers.

Me: I missed you.

Siba: I'm worried about you Mbali. Since this whole break with you and Khwezi you've been

distant, always at work or at home. You've never been like that when it comes to guys.

Me: it's way beyond that. I miss him so much. I feel like I'm falling apart without him.

Siba: then talk to him, Khwezi has been waiting for you for a while now.

Me: it's not easy Siba.

Siba: what is so hard? You both love each other and you are still his fiancée.

Me: ok Siba please don't judge me.

Siba: have I ever judged you before?

Me: ok. Uh I'm pregnant.

She is not shocked.

Me: ok I wasn't expecting your reaction.

Siba: I knew. I stayed with you for 4 years. I've been your best friend for 6. I know everything about you Mbali. I noticed from the day you told me you won't drink.

Me: ok. So you and Nathan are the only people that know. I'm scared to tell Khwezi.

Siba: how far are you?

Me: nearly 3 months. 11 weeks.

Siba: you can keep a secret. You're probably showing.

Me: I am.

Siba: call Khwezi. Meet up with him and tell him.

Me: next week.

She looks at me and grabs my phone then gives it back, and she sent Khwezi a message telling him I'll see him later at his place.

I just looked at her and I had no words. We went to Steers, she ordered a burger. I was just going to have cheesy chips. I suddenly got emotional when I remembered that Khwezi introduced me to those. We'd fight over them even in public and we'd end up laughing our lungs out.

I went back to work and continue. Mondays are a drag. I fetch Enzo from school then drop her off and home and drive back since I'm going to Khwezi. I am so nervous, just imagine being rejected with a baby on the way. I hoot, I forgot my keys at home. The gate opens and the minute I drive in the door open. I get out and walk up to him and he hugs me. I suddenly get emotional, and he pulls me inside.

Khwezi: I missed you.

Me: I missed you too.

Khwezi: But are you willing to give us another chance?

Me: I never left you Khwezi, I just needed to think about what you did.

Khwezi: I know what I did and I regret it every day.

Me: you're lucky I never told my dad. You'd be dead.

He chuckles then he's suddenly serious again.

Khwezi: you said its important.

Me: it is. Uhm Khwezi I want to be with you again but please promise not to hurt me like that. At least not intentionally.

Khwezi: I promise my love.

He kisses my hand and my stomach is knots. I am so scared.

Me: and there's more.

He has a concerned look.

Me: I know you said you don't want a baby until we're married and that will happen.

Khwezi: what's the matter?

Me: uhm I'm pregnant.

He is so shocked that he let's go ofmy hand and I feel tears build up. I close my eyes and wait for his next move.

Me: It was an accident Khwezi I am so sorry I

know you aren't ready..

Khwezi: don't, don't call my baby an accident.

I let out a sigh of relief and open my eyes and tears just flow.

Khwezi: how long have you known?

Me: about 3 to 4 weeks now. I am sorry for not telling you. I was scared of your reaction since you said you don't want....

He puts his index finger on my lips.

Khwezi: shh. Baby I understand. I would have also been scared but it happened and we can't do anything about it. We have a baby on the way. I can't believe I'm going to be a father. How far are you?

Me: 11 weeks. It happened before my miscarriage. The doctor said I was probably carrying twins or there wasn't a miscarriage at all.

He just smiles and lifts up my top.

Khwezi: I can't believe I never noticed. You're already showing. I know he/she wasn't part of our plans just yet but I don't want you to regret it. I will make sure you have the best pregnancy ever.

I smile and tears just escape. I was just thinking of my first pregnancy and how I was such a mess when I told Siya because he immediately said he wants to end things and focus in himself and now that things are different I am so happy. Tears are the only way I can express hkw happy I am...

[05/14, 13:53] Mk: Insert 28

.

I'll be writing in past tense from now on since I got a lot of requests..

.

It was getting late and I was still at Khwezi's place.

Khwezi: so you're telling me no one knows?

Me: nope just you, Nathan and Siba.

Khwezi: wow.

We watched his favourite series then he took me home. It was nearly 7.

Khwezi: when are we telling our parents?

Me: andazi. I'm scared of my dad.

Khwezi: I'll deal with him. Plus during the weekend my family is going to meet your family. We'll probably py everything then.

Me: I need to tell both my parents before the weekend then. My mom is going to freak out.

Khwezi: we're getting married though.

Me: I know.

I leaned in for a kiss then he laughed.

Khwezi: sewu dikiwe?

Me: no I just need to rush back in I'm going to

work tomorrow.

Khwezi: I'll come pick you up at 7.

I nodded then he smiled and kissed me again. I got out of the car and he watched me walk in the house. The whole family was in the lounge so I greeted.

Dad: and where have you been?

Me: I went out.

Amanda: come on Raymond she's old enough.

Me: I'm sorry.

I didn't even have the energy to fight him. I walked away and my baby followed me.

Enzo: mama I missed you.

Me: I missed you too princess.

Enzo: I miss khulu too.

I hadn't seen my mom in ages. The last time we saw her was in July and now it was September. We spoke 3 times a week and I'd probably see

her Saturday during the negotiations.

Me: sizo mbona Friday.

She smiled.

She was the only thing that made sense in my life at the moment.

I decided to call my mom now. She had to tell my uncles in time. She spoke to Enzo first then she spoke to me.

Mom: my baby.

Me: hey unjani?

Mom: perfect my love wena?

Me: I'm good.

Mom: you don't sound good.

Me: ewe mama I need to tell you something.

Mom: it sounds serious. Utheni?

Me: uh I'm pregnant.

She went quiet for some time.

Me: mama!

Mom: I don't know what to say.

Me: everything will be fine.

Mom: sizothetha Friday.

Me: ok. Bye.

She hung up and I knew she was hurt. Any parent would be. My mom never raised me like that and that is why she was acting that way.

And now the big problem was my dad. My dad has been controlling from the go. He's probably used to controlling Nathan and Libo but I am not them. I am very scared of him because of the things I've heard about him.

I went down for supper then I went straight to bed. I was tired. I had a very long day.

.

The next morning I woke Enzo up and we went to take a bath together. We got dressed then

walked downstairs for breakfast.

The whole family was already there. I'm always the last one to get there.

Me: morning family.

Libo: someone is in a good mood.

Me: it's Tuesday.

I sat down and had a salad. I'd have real breakfast at the office.

Me: uhm dad we need to talk. I'll see you during lunch.

Dad: concerning?

Me: stuff.

Dad: ok.

My phone beeped and it was Khwezi. I got up.

Me: see you later.

I left with Enzo and we walked to the car.

Khwezi: my Enzo.

She blushed.

Enzo: good morning.

Me: mna?

Khwezi: you're so jealous.

Me: I love you too.

We kissed and he drove off. We dropped Enzo first then I went to have breakfast at Mc D's. I was starving. My car was delivered a few minutes later by one of Khwezi's guys. I drove to work and got started immediately. The time flew and it was already time for my lunch. I drove to my dads workplace. This was going to be really hard. I walked in but the receptionist told me he had a meeting. I sat and waited then a few minutes later he was ready to see me.

Dad: and what brings my daughter here.

I sat down and he did the same.

Me: ah please don't shout.

Dad: I would never do that to you my angel.

Me: uhm I'm pregnant.

He just looked at me blankly.

Dad: Mbali why are you doing this to yourself?

Me: it wasn't planned.

Dad: you just had a miscarriage not so long ago.

Me: the doctor said I was probably carrying twins at the time or there was never a miscarriage.

Dad: that's hectic.

Me: yeah.

Dad: that's why you've been acting strange. God Mbali you're making me feel old.

He had a smile.

Me: I'm sorry.

Dad: Khwezi is really lucky to have you, does he know that?

Me: I think he does.

Dad: he's already taking you away from me.

Me: I'll visit often. You'll see me all the time.

Dad: I hope so.

I was so surprised that he was friendly and cool about the whole issue. It's so not like him.

.

On Friday I drove to Queenstown with my dad and brothers. Amanda said she wouldn't be able to make it and I understood. My mom and I never got the chance to speak, I wasn't feeling well and Siba and Buhle were there to nurse me. Although Buhle was always busy with Libo. On Saturday the negotiations took place and everything went well. I was so excited but nervous at the same time. Starting a new home and family is scary especially when I know the mother in law might be pretending to like me. After the negotiations I went to Khwezi's car. I

had brought him food. The rest of his family was inside with mine.

Khwezi: I could get used to this.

Me: whatever.

Khwezi: I'm so glad this is over.

Me: how much did you pay?

Khwezi: hayi. You can ask your family.

Me: uyadika shame.

He smiled.

We were both quiet and it was awkward.

Khwezi: marry me.

Me: I am marrying you and traditionally we are married.

Khwezi: on Monday. We can go to court and get married then we'll have a big wedding when the baby is born.

This was so huge. I'm nkt scared of

commitment but this is making a promise before important people and I was scared. This was too soon ..

[05/14, 13:53] Mk: Insert 29

.

He was waiting for a response and I didn't know how to out it without hurting him.

Me: baby you know I love you right? And I want to spend the rest of my life with you but I think we're rushing things. It's only been 6 months.

Khwezi: it's fine then. I'll wait till next year.

Me: awuqumbanga neh?

I said that pouting.

Khwezi: no my love. I understand.

I watched him eat then took his plate and walked inside.

Siba: you guys are so cute kodwa.

Me: thank you.

Buhle: we're leaving tomorrow right?

Me: uh how about you go back with my dad and my brothers? I'm thinking of leaving on Monday.

Buhle smiled.

Me: my dad bites ke sisi.

They laughed. My dad walked in and kissed my cheek.

Dad: my baby.

I smiled.

Dad: everything went well.

Me: mom told me.

Dad: we'll be leaving soon.

Me: oh tata can you leave with my friends. I'm sure Libo won't mind dropping them off.

Dad: it's fine my love. How's my grandchild treating you?

Me: I'm ok but tired.

Enzo walked in. She's been playing with the other kids outside.

Me: ha baby. You haven't eaten the whole day. Iya ku khulu ndiyeza.

Enzo: Khwezi uthi iza.

Me: ndiyeza ngoku.

She ran out.

Me: uh dad I'll see you on Monday then.

I hugged him then walked to where Khwezi was parked. He was carrying Enzo.

Me: you called for me?

Khwezi: I'm leaving so I needed to see you and Enzo.

Me: can't you book a BnB and leave with us on Monday?

Khwezi: is this how things are going to be for the next 6 months?

Me: I think so.

He laughed.

Khwezi: I'll decide when I get to town.

Me: sufuna ndiku lahle ke.

Enzo: ha mama!

Khwezi: mnqande nyani baby.

I hit him playfully.

Khwezi: uno dlame.

I just smiled and he pulled me in with his free hand and kissed me. I immediately pulled away.

Enzo: ndiyotya.

She jumped off and ran away. We spoke for about 5 minutes before they had to leave and he couldn't spend the weekend.

I spent the rest of the weekend with my mom and Enzo. It was the best weekend ever. My mom was a bit calm about this whole pregnancy thing.

.

So it's Monday and I had returned to East London. I took a shower at around 5 and got dressed in a maroon knitted dress and heels. It was just for a few hours so I didn't mind. We were going to have dinner at Khwezi's place. His parents invited me. I didn't want to take Enzo with me because I felt it was a bit inappropriate.

So Khwezi came to fetch me and we drove to his place.

Khwezi: I can't believe your bump is showing.

Me: don't remind me.

We arrived and Chuma came to open.

Chuma: finally you guys arrive.

We walked in and went to the dining area since the family was already there. We greeted then sat down.

K'dad: so how is the pregnancy treating you so far?

Me: it's ok , no problems yet.

K'mom: it's not her first pregnancy so she'll manage.

Khwezi: don't.

K'mom: you can serve yourselves.

Khwezi helped me but I asked him to dish up salads only. This woman kept giving me cold looks. I couldn't eat when someone kept looking at me like that.

Chuma: I can't believe I'm going to be an aunt. I can't wait to spoil him/her rotten and take so many pictures.

I smiled.

K'mom: I hope it's really yours, we don't want a repetition of what happened.

Me: I'll take the dishes to the kitchen.

I stood up and took all the plates to the kitchen. My blood was boiling. She walked in shortly

afterwards.

K'mom: if you think trapping him with a baby will make him stay loyal to you then think again.

I wanted to strangle her but I had morals.

Me: at least I have something that belongs to him what do you have?

K'mom: I'm his mother he will come running to me whenever things go wrong.

Me: I'm sure you won't satisfy his needs now will you? I'm the girl that screams his name and makes him go crazy. This baby is evident that I was so good he couldn't pull out. So who do you think he'll side with? The mother of his child or his mother?

I fake a smile then walk out.

Khwezi: are you okay?

Me: yes my love.

I bend over then kiss his cheek.

Chuma: you guys are so cute.

Khwezi: sizi goals? I know.

We laughed. His mother walked back in and we left because it was getting late.

Me: I'm hungry.

Khwezi: but you just had dinner.

Me: I only had salads. Yeka. I'm sure there are leftovers at home.

Khwezi: nyani?

Me: ewe.

He drives me home and the road is so empty. Now I understand why he never let's me drive at this time.

We stop at the traffic lights and the next thing I know there are gun shots. I screamed. Khwezi held me, trying to cover me. He pushed me down. I was already in tears. I've never been so scared in my life...

[05/14, 13:54] Mk: Insert 30(short)

.

The minute the gun shots stopped and I heard the cars drive away I got up and the first thing I saw was Khwezi covered in blood. He was resting peacefully on his seat with his head laid back.

Me: Khwezi!!

I shook him and he groaned. I started crying because I could see he was slowly losing his life. I searched for my phone and called an ambulance and I called my dad crying. He told me to hang on.

After a few minutes the ambulance arrived and my dad's too. He was with my brothers. The paramedics took him and I got in with him.

I was slowly losing my breath. I couldn't believe what just happened.

They kept pumping oxygen for him.

Paremadic: we're losing him.

I just went blank and nearly lost it. I kept repeating "no" till I actually just dropped to the floor and someone caught me. I don't remember what happened after that...

I woke up in a hospital bed with a nurse examining me.

Nurse: finally. I should call the doctor.

She walked out and came back with the doctor. She smiled. She was so beautiful.

Dr: finally you're awake.

I just smiled.

Dr: you need to rest. Your pressure is too high and it's not good for the baby. So please try not to stress.

Me: I'll try. Uhm I think my fiancée was admitted here. He came in with me. Can I see him?

Nurse: he's still in ER.

I nodded trying so hard not to stress.

The doctor left and moments later my family walked in. Now I know it's after midnight and they probably forced their way in because it's not a time to see a patient.

Dad: are you ok?

Me: I guess so. My blood pressure is a bit too high though. I was scared.

Libo: what really happened?

Me: they just came out of nowhere and they started shooting.

Nathan: how did you survive?

Me: I'd probably be dead but he took a few bullets for me and he pushed me under the seat.

Dad: that is hectic. This is why I didn't want to expose you into this life. You are bound to bump into stuff like that from time to time so you better be prepared. Do you by any chance see who it was?

I shook my head. The minute I heard gun shots I just went blank.

Dad: I won't call your mom just yet. I don't want to stress her out at this time.

I nodded. I needed to rest so I asked them to leave and I slept. I was tired, scared and cold.

I could have died or been in a seriously critical condition if he didn't try to protect me.

.

I woke up and it was morning I called the nurse and asked to go see Khwezi. He was in a coma apparently they shot him 5 times. The nurse told me his family was here so I'd have to wait. To be honest I wasn't in the mood to see anyone. I didn't want to see his mother or to be interrogated about what happened.

Chuma walked in and she just smiled. She was a darling.

Chuma: are you okay?

Me: I'm trying.

Chuma: Khwezi wouldn't like to see you like this.

Me: I know. I'm trying so hard to be strong, at least for the baby.

Chuma: keep at it. I don't want to lose my niece or nephew. Have you seen him?

I shook my head. And she sniffed. I sat up straight.

Me: come here.

I hugged her so tight.

Me: I believe he's going to make it out alive. When I saw him last night I had lost all hope but when they told me he was in a coma I got relieved.

Chuma: Mbali you know what hurts the most? That my mom is so selfish that all her selfish ways lead to this.

I was so confused. I wanted to know what she

was talking about.

Me: meaning?

She pulled away and wiped her tears and looked at me.

Chuma: mom hired people to kill you. They probably thought you were driving home alone...

I immediately zoned out. Why does this woman hate me so much. And now her hate for me nearly cost me Khwezi's life. What mother would do that. She was going to hurt Khwezi anyway.

Tears just escaped my eyes with no warning sign.

Chuma: I am so sorry Mbali. I am sorry.

Me: how did you know she was doing this?

Chuma: the minute your dad called she started freaking out and she confessed. She's at home packing.

I sniffed, wiping my tears. I needed to stop crying.

The nurse walked in.

Nurse: you can go see him.

I got up and walked to his room. He had so many machines and pipes around him. I was in tears the minute I walked in. I went to sit next to him and held his hand. He looked dead.

Me: Baby. I miss you already Khwezi. I wish you'd just wake up already. I need you now more than ever. Your baby needs you. Baby you saved the both of us. I'm so grateful that you were there to protect us. But now I need you. You're probably resting but I need you to come back to us soon, ok.?

I kissed his lips and they were so cold. I just got so emotional after seeing him. And I just needed to be alone.

[05/14, 18:34] Mk: Insert 31

.

I got to my ward and had my lunch then fell asleep. I woke up when someone shook me. I looked up and it was my dad.

Dad: how are you?

Me: ok.

Dad: baby I'm worried about your safety so I have guards watching you 24/7. I don't want you to freak out when you see them.

Me: no need. Khwezi's mom did this.

His eyes shot out.

Me: I know right. She wanted to kill me.

Dad: why would she do that?

Me: she never liked me.

Dad: I swear she's going to pay. Bandile will have to forgive me.

He walked out and he never came back for the rest of the day.

.

I was discharged and when I got home I received news that my dad really messed up Khwezi's mom. I saw pictures too and she was bad. After the whole scandal his mom left town. Apparently she went to Port Elizabeth. I didn't care as long as she was far from me.

I've been visiting Khwezi everyday. My stomach is growing and now I can feel the baby move. Khwezi has been going back and forth. One minute he's close to recovery and the next he's good as dead. That destroyed me completely but I had to think about the baby. It was facing complications already and I couldn't lose another baby. Especially now, this baby has been my rock. It made me stronger every day.

.

So it's now September and it's been exactly 28 days since the whole incident happened. I'm now 4 months pregnant, I'm visible already and I

look so beautiful. I wished I could stay like that.

So as always I wake up and go to work. I can't let the business fall on my watch. I worked through till lunch. On my way out I received a call from my mom.

Me: mama.

Mom: my love. How are you?

Me: I'm ok you?

Mom: I'm good. Is it still the same result?

Me: yes. I don't know what to do anymore.

Mom: be strong my love.

Me: I'll try.

Mom: when will I see you?

Me: I don't know, we'll see mama. You know things are still hectic this side.

Mom: ok I understand. I miss you.

Me: me too.

We said our goodbyes then I walk to my car and drive to Mc Ds drive through. I got a big mac then drove to the hospital. I ate in the car then walked in to the hospital. I went to his room and he was still peaceful as always. I sat down next to him.

Me: hey. I'm here again. I wish you'd respond. I'd do anything to hear your voice, even if it's an argument.

I let out a sigh. After some time I got up to leave. I heard him groan, I turned and he was moving so I rushed to call the doctor. I was told to wait outside so I waited patiently. This was worth the wait.

After an hour or so the doctor came to me.

Dr: Mr Ngoma?

Me: yes.

Dr: you can go see him. But don't upset him.

Me: I won't.

I walked to his room and he looked like he was in pain. I couldn't believe my eyes when I saw him move and blink. It all felt like a dream.

Me: hey.

Khwezi: hi.

I went to sit next to him.

Me: I missed you.

He narrowed his eyebrows.

Khwezi: who are you?

My heart broke instantly. Maybe I'm overreacting but this hurt a lot. I spent so much months with him and then he forgets me.

Me: Mbali, your fiancée.

Khwezi: I have a fiancée?

I got up and attempted to walk out by because I felt he needed space.

Me: I'm leaving.

He laughed.

Khwezi: come on baby I'm only joking. I'd never forget you even if I tried.

He pulled me in for a hug but I didn't want to hold on too tight.

Me: at least you still have humor.

Khwezi: let me be.

He kissed my forehead.

Khwezi: my baby is growing.

Me: I know. Already started moving.

Khwezi: I can't believe I missed those moments.

Me: there are still more.

Khwezi: I'm sorry you had to see that.

He changed.

Me: it's not your fault.

I didn't want to be the one to tell him that his mom did this so I kept quiet...

[05/14, 18:34] Mk: Insert 32

.

I spent some time with Khwezi. I really missed him.

Khwezi: come sleep next to me.

Me: I'm so big.

Khwezi: no you aren't. Come.

I got up and lay next him.

Me: I'm glad you're awake. I really missed you. And I'm glad that you saved us.

Khwezi: it's my job to protect you.

I just smiled.

Khwezi: I missed seeing you smile.

I blushed more. We kept talking then I fell asleep with his arms around me.

.

Khwezi...

It felt so good having her in my arms again. And seeing her cute pouted lips when she's asleep. I had to make phone calls so I took her phone and called Anda.

Anda: Koti.

Me: Hey Anda.

He kept quiet, he was probably shocked.

Anda: and why wasn't I told my brother is awake.

Me: it's only been two hours.

Anda: ungu die hard nyani.

Me: I know. So did you find who did this?

Anda: some small mob. I don't know how they're connected to you.

Me: where are they?

Anda: they are still on the run.

Me: after a month Anda? You can't be serious.

Anda: I'm trying.

Me: well not hard enough. Nxx

Then I hung up. Anda was really testing me. He's at home chilled but he knows that there are people after me. And the worst part is my pregnant fiancée has been out there every day and he doesn't care.

I tried to shift but ended up waking Mbali up.

Me: you can go back to sleep.

Mbali: I'm hungry.

Me: I'll ask the guys to bring you something.

Mbali: how about I go buy something then come back?

Me: I don't want you to leave me.

Mbali: Khwezi don't. This is not you.

Me: fine.

She got off the bed and wore her shoes then she kissed me and walked out.

.

Mbali

I drove to Steers and bought two combos. I drove back to the club and clear a few things. Then I drove back to the hospital. I walked in and his family was there, even Aphiwe

Me: molweni.

Aphiwe: oh my gosh Mbali you're so beautiful.

Me: thank you.

Chuma: can I have your chips?

Me: you can have your brothers.

I sat down and ate. They were watching me the whole time. It was a bit awkward but I didn't care.

Khwezi: when you're done come lie next to me.

I looked at his dad and he just smiled.

Aphiwe: how's my niece treating you?

Khwezi: who said it's a girl?

Aphiwe: I can feel it.

Me: I've been ok. But I eat a lot lately.

Aphiwe: it's normal.

Me: I know but it was never like that with Enzo.

Aphiwe: kids are different.

K'dad: I have to run. I'll see you later.

They fist pumped then he left. I walked outside to call Libo.

Libo: my baby sis.

Me: the big bro. Please do me a favour.

Libo: aha.

Me: please fetch Enzo for me. I'll probably be back later then usual.

Libo: ok. I'll be at home when you return.

Me: I know.

He chuckled then hung up.

I got back inside and it was tense. I knew

Chuma would tell him.

Me: I'm back.

Khwezi: where is she?

Chuma: dad chased her out. So she's been living with relatives in PE.

Aphiwe: how could she be so evil? She's changed, ever since dad started focusing on his job more. She doesn't even contact me anymore.

Khwezi: but that has nothing to do with Mbali.

Me: uhm I was leaving. I'll come back tomorrow. I need a shower.

Khwezi: you aren't leaving me here.

Me: your baby is killing me. I have to rest.

Aphiwe looked at him and he finally agreed. We kissed then I took my stuff and left. I didn't want to get involved in their family issues.

I drove straight home and only Amanda was

home.

Me: Manda.

Amanda: you're back early.

Me: went to see Khwezi. He's awake.

Amanda: finally we'll have you back. The moods and distance weren't doing it.

I smiled. Then walked to my room and took a long shower. Wore my pj's and fell asleep. Libo and Enzo woke me up.

Me: you guys are so irritating.

Enzo: no we aren't.

Libo: you'll have a lazy baby.

Me: and what do you know about babies?

Libo: a lot.

Afer sometime they left. I was so tired. I walked downstairs and the whole family was there.

Me: hello to everyone.

Dad: look whose in a good mood.

Nathan: she knows she'll be getting some in a few days. It's been dry in there.

I gave him a straight look.

Dad: and it has been, just imagine all the spider webs in there.

I looked at my dad then giggled. He's usually the one defending me.

Me: I can't believe you're doing this to me.

Dad: I'm being honest.

Me: your honesty is bitter.

Nathan: hayi mahn mntase it's okay to be honest. What did you miss?

Me: him.

Dad: and what else?

Me: daddy don't do this to your little girl.

Amanda was laughing the whole time. There

was a knock so I rushed to the door, running away from these idiots. The minute I opened she rushed to me and placed her head on my chest.

Me: Buhle?

She wailed.

Me: come.

I walked with her to me bedroom.

Me: what happened?

Buhle: you know I love your brother with everything in me but he just wants to play around. I was pregnant.

Me: what happened?

Buhle: I aborted it.

Me: why?

Buhle: you know how Libo is. One minute he wants to be with me and the next he's busy with other girls. And I can't really complain because

we're just fooling around. There is no relationship.

Me: I'm not judging you, I know how Libo is. But you could have raised the baby on your own.

Buhle: with what money?

Me: he was obviously going to support his baby. Have you told him?

She shook her head.

Buhle: I'll go tell him now.

She walked to his room and I went to go call him. I remained upstairs just in case something bad happened.

Just as I had thought after a few minutes I heard Buhles screams and cries. I walked to his room and his door was locked so I went call my dad.

Dad: Libongwe open this fucken door.

She kept screaming.

Me: Libo!!

It went quiet then he came and opened. My dad punched him immediately. I went over to Buhle who was lying on the floor. Her hands covering her face.

Me: come.

I walked her to my room and ran a warm bath for her. Her body was a bit bruised.

I ate my supper then took hers upstairs.

She fell asleep after eating and I followed shortly after.

The next morning I did my daily routine. My dad left with Enzo. I left Buhle in bed with a note. I walked downstairs and Libo was there.

Libo: I'm sorry Mbali. I know I shouldn't be apologising to you but I'm sorry. I just got angry.

Me: you didn't have to beat her up like that.

Libo: Mbali she killed my baby. I was hurting,

still am.

Me: you'll get through it. Just don't beat her up. Talk to her and you'll understand why she did it.

I had my breakfast then left. I started at the hospital and when I got there Khwezi was getting dressed.

Me: and what are you doing?

Khwezi: I'm going home.

Me: who discharged you?

Khwezi: me. I have a firm, I have businesses who do you think is looking after that?

Me: you are not fully recovered yet.

Khwezi: mamela neh baby. If you don't want to get on my bad side. You'll help me get dressed, then drive me home.

Me: I will not do that.

Khwezi: fine. I'll call someone to fetch me. I don't need you.

He zipped his jearsy then called someone. A few minutes later a guy in black walked in.

Khwezi: take my bags.

He did as told then walked out. Khwezi was limping walking behind him.

I just stood there shocked....

[05/14, 18:35] Mk: Insert 33

.

After standing there trying to think of a way forward I decide to go to Khwezi's doctor and he gave me his medication after a lot of convincing. I drive to his place and the door is not locked so I enter. I walk to his study and he's busy shouting orders so I grab the phone from him and switch it off.

Khwezi: Mbali!! Don't you dare.

Me: Khwezi you are not strong enough for all this. Work can wait.

Khwezi: if I lose money it's going to be on you.

Me: money is nothing. You can work on that later. Right now your health should be your priority.

Khwezi: don't act like my mother.

Me: traditionally I am your wife Khwezi. And if we can't work together now. I doubt we'll ever be able to.

He looks at me closes his eyes. When he does that he's really angry and trying to calm down.

Me: Khwezi I don't care how angry you are. I'm only trying to help you.

Khwezi: ok ke Mbali. Since whatever you say goes. What do you want me to do?

Me: since I have the authority I want you to go to bed and I'll nurse you till you get better.

He rolls his eyes and I just laugh.

He walks upstairs while I walk to the kitchen and start cooking for him. I walk to his bedroom and he's busy on his laptop.

Me: Khwezi!!

Khwezi: I'm watching movies

I know he's lying. I give him his food and sit next to him. He eats then I give him his medication.

Khwezi: I miss Enzo.

Me: I miss her too but I have to be here nursing your stubborn ass.

He frowns.

Me: come on ndiyadlala. I need to go buy groceries for you.

Khwezi: you can go with my driver.

I nod. He gives me his card then he sleeps and I leave with his driver.

Me: hi

Him: hi

Me: whats your name?

Him: Phila.

Me: nice name.

Phila: thank you.

He's then quiet. This is going to be a long ride. We get to the mall and he follows me everywhere I go. I head to Pick n Pay and start shopping. He is driving the trolley while I keep loading stuff. I bump into Siya and he looks like he is shocked to see me. Then I remembered, it's the baby bump. I haven't see Siya in forever. My brothers drop Enzo off. Or he fetches her from school.

Me: oh hi.

He shakes my hand.

Siya: look at you. All big and yellow.

Me: yeah.

Siya: I didn't know about the pregnancy.

Me: now you know.

Siya: so you're going to be a mother of two?

Me: yep.

Siya: you know I still care about you and I wouldn't want to see your boyfriend leaving you with a baby.

Me: fiancée. And not all men are like you Siya.

Phila: uhm we have to go.

We walk away and leave him standing there.

Siya has the nerve kodwa.

We buy a few stuff then I go and pay. He carries all the plastics to the car then we leave.

Me: ah Phila can we go to Selborne, I need to fetch my daughter.

He nods and drives to Selborne. I fetch Enzo from creche and we drive to Khwezi's. It's already 2.

Enzo: why are you fetching me early?

Me: because siya ku Khwezi.

Enzo: ohh at the hospital?

Me: ha.a.

She nods and we finally arrive at Khwezi's. We walk in and Phila follows with the shopping bags.

Khwezi is in the lounge watching soccer. I seriously give up.

Khwezi: Enzo!

She runs and jumps on him. He groans a little but holds it in, probably doesn't want to disappoint her.

Enzo: you're back!

Khwezi: yes baby.

Enzo: we have a date remember?

Khwezi: I haven't forgotten about that.

Enzo: good. Are we sleeping over?

Me: no.

Khwezi: but baby you're supposed to be nursing me.

I narrow my eyebrows.

Me: I don't have to. I actually should be punishing you.

He has this fake shocked look with his eyes wide open and his one hand on his chest.

Khwezi: haa! Baby uyamva umamakho?

Enzo: mama you are so mean.

When they are together they always do this to me.

Khwezi: I know.

Me: mxm.

I walk to the kitchen and start preparing supper. Stir fry, rice and beef stew. For dessert I make chocolate mousse.

At 6 I am done and I set the table. I call my dad.

Me: dada.

He chuckles.

Dad: and what does my daughter want from me today?

Me: both Enzo and I won't be sleeping at home today. Khwezi discharged himself.

He laughed.

Dad: I knew he'd do that. It's okay baby as long as you're both safe.

Me: ok goodnight.

I hang up and take the food to the dinning room. Enzo says grace and we dig in.

Khwezi: my daughter can pray.

Enzo giggles and I just look at him. We had agreed that I'd only tell Enzo to call him dad or uncle once we're married. I don't want to confuse my daughter.

He whispers sorry and I just carry on eating.

Khwezi: the food is good.

Me: thanks.

Enzo: mama, I don't want this.

She points at her stir fry.

Khwezi: I'll eat it for you.

I stare at him and he raises his shoulders.

I let out a sigh. With Khwezi, Enzo always wins and nothing I say will change anything.

We finish eating and I wash the dishes. I never sleep with dirty dishes. No matter what.

I get upstairs and Khwezi is in bed alone.

Me: where's my daughter?

Khwezi: our daughter.

Me: whatever. Where is she?

Khwezi: she's in her room. You guys should move in already.

Me: too soon.

Khwezi: you did say you are my wife.

Me: I was angry.

He chuckled then got up to change. The next thing I knew he's holding my butt kissing me. I want him too but he's hurt.

He squeezes my butt and I moan.

Me: ah ha.a

He pauses then carries on. He throws me on the bed. He goes for the cookie first and I moan. It's been a while. I feel an orgasm and I just slowly let it out. He licks me clean then kisses me. And enter me while kissing me and my back archs.

Me: Baby, you're hurt.

He smiles and stares at me like he's looking into my soul. He is rough and fast.

I moan in both pleasure and pain.

He stops and I know he's realising. He collapses on top of me.

Me: ah Khwezi, shouldn't you be on bed rest?

Khwezi: I am in bed aren't I?

Me: you know what I mean.

Khwezi: I'm sure my baby needed that as much as I did.

I giggle.

Me: move.

He moves and I put my head on his chest...

[05/14, 18:35] Mk: Her heart- My story

Insert 34

.

I woke up in the morning and Khwezi was getting dressed in his suits. Khwezi was something else.

Me: and where are you going?

Khwezi: good morning to you too. I'm going to work. A very important client called.

Me: why don't you ask that client to come here?

Khwezi: baby thats not professional. And plus it won't take long.

Me: God please remind me why I agreed to marry this stubborn man.

He laughs.

Khwezi: because you love me like that.

I get out of bed and he holds me close to him.

Me: don't kiss me.

Khwezi: I love you with morning breathe. Come here.

He kisses me and Enzo runs in.

Khwezi: you should bring your clothes. Because from now on both you and Enzo should spend weekends with me.

Me: mhh.

Enzo: mama. School.

Me: it's Friday nje. So it doesn't matter.

She frowns.

Me: you wanted to sleepover so it's not my fault.

Khwezi: do you want to come to work with me?

She smiled.

Enzo: yes.

Khwezi spoils Enzo too much. Sometimes it was irritating like now. I want him to be home and he decides to go to work with Enzo.

Me: aren't you meeting an important client?

Khwezi: so?

I decide not to respond.

.

Its now November. Both Enzo and I have been sleeping over at Khwezi's during the weekend. It wasn't a bad idea after all. I actually got to feel

what its like to stay with him.

I was now 6 months pregnant and looking like a whale. I hated it because I'm short and it looks so weird. Khwezi decided we get married before the baby is born. I was fine with that idea.

So it's Saturday morning and it was my birthday. Khwezi woke me up singing for me. I just blush. Enzo walks in with a cupcake.

Enzo: happy birthday mommy.

Me: thank you guys.

Khwezi: so what do you want to do today?

Me: I don't know.

Khwezi: I've got a few stuff planned then.

I get up and go brush my teeth. Then come back and eat my cupcake.

Khwezi: I can't believe you're 24.

Me: yeah well well I'm 24.

Enzo: daddy how old are you?

Over the time Enzo started call Khwezi, daddy. It was weird.

Khwezi: very very old.

Enzo: you know I'm 3 and mommy is 24, how old are you?

I just laugh.

Khwezi: I'm 28.

Enzo: finally.

Enzo bathes and Khwezi helps me shower. It's been a bit hard lately.

My baby kicked and Khwezi smiled.

Khwezi: he's going to be a lot of trouble.

Yep, it was confirmed that it was going to be a boy.

Me: don't.

He laughs. After our bath we get dressed. I wear my white maxi dress. It's boob tubed. Then I wear my black sandles and fix my weave.

Khwezi wears denim and white. And my baby does the same. We look like a complete family.

We have breakfast then go to the car.

Enzo: daddy where are we going?

Khwezi: you'll see.

We drive to the beach and Enzo is already in the water with Khwezi.

I just watch them play. No one has called yet and it hurts but I don't put my mind to it.

Its already 12 and Khwezi comes back.

Me: baby I'm hungry.

Khwezi: ewe we're going to have lunch just now.

Me: phi?

Khwezi: you'll see.

We drive to Vincent and its at this BnB.

Me: and now?

Khwezi: they have really nice food here.

Me: mhh.

We park and get out then walk to the restaurant...

"Surprise!!"

I am really surprised. There's blue and white and "Its a boy" sign. Everyone is here, from my mom, cousins, friends, old colleagues and Khwezi's sisters.

Me: wow!

Khwezi: love it?

I nod and they start singing happy birthday. Khwezi kissed me.

Khwezi: I'll fetch you later.

I nod and he leaves.

They sit me down.

Me: before everything, I'm hungry.

They laugh and the waitress serves me. I eat my food and they start with the gifts then

games. My God I am tired and my stomach is heavy.

Its after 4. And now it's time for speeches. My mom starts.

Mom: baby. I can't believe you're really leaving me. But today we're here to celebrate you and your baby boy. I can't believe I'm going to be a grandmother again. It feels so unreal. But here we are. I hope you enjoy your day and I hope you will enjoy waking up at midnight more.

Everyone laughs.

Mom: I love you my baby, enjoy.

She comes and hugs me then everyone follows after her. Some people are already leaving.

Siba: you're so beautiful.

Me: thank you.

Zim: did you enjoy?

Me: yes thank you guys. I really enjoyed my day.

I wasn't expecting the baby shower so soon though.

Aphiwe: my idea. I couldn't really wait till next year. I'll be preparing for my graduation.

Me: oh yeah. Thanks Aphiwe.

She smiles.

They start packing my gifts and Khwezi is already here to fetch us. Aphiwe and Chuma will be sleeping over. We drive to Khwezi's place and I am. So tired.

Khwezi: Aphiwe what did you do to my wife?

Aphiwe: what did I do?

Me: I just need to sleep.

We get to the house and theres a woman standing there with a kid.

Khwezi: what the hell is she doing here?

Chuma: this is going to be long night.

Me: what is going on?

Khwezi: don't worry about it.

I was starting to get angry. What is going on here?..

[05/14, 18:35] Mk: Insert 35

.

I am already angry because no ones wants to tell me what is going on.

Khwezi get out and goes over to her and they argue.

Me: what is going on?

Chuma: she's Khwezi's ex.

Aphiwe: don't worry about her. They hate each other so whatever she's playing at won't work.

Me: Zintle?

Aphiwe: yes.

I walk out and go to the drivers side. I need to sleep. Khwezi turns to look at me and the girl looks beautiful. Yellow bone with an ass for

days, even bigger than mine. Everything looks perfect, her hips, legs, boobs. Everything about her is perfect. I get in the car and open the gate then drive in.

I am too tired to hear the story. Aphiwe carries Enzo to her bedroom.

Aphiwe: please don't stress about what has happened?

Me: I'm okay.

I change to pj's and get into bed. And I doze off immediately.

The next morning I wake up and Khwezi is not next to me. By the looks of things he didn't come to bed. I go take a long bath then get dressed in a below the knee dress and pumps. It's Sunday so I have to go to church. I fix my hair and go down for breakfast. This Zintle is there with her son. I am so hurt, my heart is literally in pieces but I try not to break down.

Me: good morning.

Zintle: at least you're nice.

I pour cereal for myself then eat as fast as I can then I leave for church. I use Khwezi's car.

I get to church and my mind is not there. After church I drive to Siba in Southernwood. I haven't spent a lot of time with my friends.

Siba: you get bigger by the hour.

Me: don't lie.

She giggled and let me in.

Siba: when was the last time it was just us too?

Me: it's been a while.

Siba: too long. Wine, coffee?

Me: Siba don't do this to me.

We laugh. She pours juice for me and she drinks wine.

Me: ha.a Siba. Please drink juice.

She just laughs at me.

Me: how's Luzuko?

Siba: we're no longer together.

Me: hayi Siba. When did that happen?

Siba: 2 weeks now.

Me: and why didn't you tell me?

Siba: I didn't want to burden you.

Me: you know my door is always open, especially for you. I've been through shit and you were always there for me.

Siba: I know.

Me: I'm sorry about the break up though.

Siba: it's nothing. I shouldn't have committed in the first place. You know what hurts the most, he introduced the girl as his friend. Then when I was trying to get to her better, I find them in bed together.

Me: yho Siba that is so sad.

She buries her face on my chest and I just rub her back.

Me: shh. Everything is going to be fine.

Siba: I hate that I'm crying over him and he's enjoying himself.

Me: it's okay to hurt baby. And it's even better to cry.

Siba: I still love him and I'd give him another chance but he's not even sorry.

I can't even find the right words. Siba is usually the one doing this for me. She's always been the "no strings attached " type of girl. And now this was new to me. And I didn't want to say bad things about Luzuko then suddenly they're back together.

Me: look at me. Luzuko did what he thought was right. That is men for you. This will hurt this bad because you aren't used to it. Next year this time you'll be laughing at this moment. So relax

and let time do the healing.

She smiles and I wipe her tears. We chat for some time and I leave at 3.

I get home and everyone is in the lounge. And by everyone I mean Aphiwe, Chuma, Zintle and her son.

Me: molweni.

Chuma: hey. You look so beautiful.

Me: thanks.

I walk upstairs and Enzo and Khwezi are watching a movie.

Me: hey.

Them: hi

I sit on the bed and take my shoes off. Then I wear my sleepers.

Me: are the gifts in the nursery?

Khwezi: yes.

I walk to the nursery. Khwezi already has a nursery. With a few baby stuff. I unpack the gifts and start packing thw clothes in the closet.

Khwezi walks in.

Khwezi: I know you're angry.

Me: I'm not.

Khwezi: I'm not stupid.

Me: ok.

Khwezi: I'll be driving my sister's home soon.

Me: and what about Zintle?

Khwezi: she's leaving tomorrow.

Me: I'm leaving at 5. So you expect me to leave you with her?

Khwezi: I've been keeping my distance.

Me: why is she here in the first place?

Khwezi: baby listen. I know you probably have ideas butshe didn't have a place to sleep.

Me: that has nothing to do with you Khwezi.

Khwezi: baby, think about the child.

Me: she could have left today.

Khwezi: her bus is for tomorrow.

Me: thats a stupid excuse Khwezi.

Khwezi: I'm sorry. I should have spoke to you.

Me: it doesn't matter now does it. You invited your ex into your house and she's spending the weekend.

Khwezi: I'm sorry.

Me: ok.

I have lunch then I take Enzo and we leave.

Khwezi is by the car before the gate even opens

Khwezi: please don't leave.

Me: we usually leave at this time. What is the problem now?

Khwezi: I'll tell her to leave then. Please wait for

me.

Me: myeke Khwezi. This is the time you prove yourself to me. Prove to me that I can trust you.

I drive and leave him standing there. We get home and Amanda has cooked.

Libo: happy belated birthday baby sis.

Me: thank you.

We hug.

Dad: come here.

We walk outside and he opens the garage and there is a Mercedes Benz C63 AMG and he hands me the key.

Dad: this is you.

Me: really?

Dad: yes my love.

I hug him so tight.

Me: oh my gosh thanks dad. I don't know how

to thank you.

Dad: this is me saying you should visit me all the time when you leave.

I laugh still in tears.

Me: I'll always visit you.

Dad: this baby is making you weak.

I laugh. My dad is the best. Sometimes I wish I had met him earlier in my life..

[05/14, 18:35] Mk: Insert 36

.

After that whole episode of being excited we got back in the house and had supper.

Amanda: did you enjoy your day?

Me: yes I did thanks.

Libo: some of us weren't invited.

Me: I didn't even know about the whole birthday/baby shower.

We finish then Libo helps me wash the dishes.

Libo: when last did you speak to Buhle?

Me: yesterday.

Libo: she doesn't want to talk to me and I really miss her.

Me: shame.

He punches me playfully.

Libo: you're my sister, you're supposed to help me.

Me: you beat her up.

Libo: it was an accident. She made me angry.

Me: you didn't hear her out.

Libo: I'm very sorry for that. I apologized a thousand times. I just need her to give me a chance to prove myself.

Me: what can I do for you?

Libo: set a date for us or something.

Me: I'll speak to her for you qha.

Libo: I love you.

Me: whatever.

I walk to my room and Enzo is already sleeping.

.

For some weird reason I was never angry about this whole Zintle saga. I was so chilled about it that even I was shocked. So it's near the end of November and Khwezi asked us to move in.

Since I was close to my due date. So I spoke to my dad about it and he was chilled. My dad was the sweetest lately.

So its a Tuesday and we had moved in during the weekend. I am just lounging around, watching tv. Khwezi insisted I work from home till I give birth.

My phone rings and I don't recognize the number but I pick up.

Me: hello

Caller: hello how are you?

Me: whose this?

Caller: Bongeka, Khwezi's mom.

I am shocked. Where did she even get my number. I haven't heard anything about her since the whole incident she caused.

Me: what do you want?

K'mom: I'm sorry about everything I put you through. And now because of my selfish ways I lost a lot of people. I am sorry. I've seen my son loves you and there's nothing I can do.

Me: I am tired of your fake tears and apologies. Both Khwezi and I don't need you in our lives. We were perfect without you.

K'mom: you don't mean that.

Me: I actually do. Listen, I don't have time for this ok?

I hang up before she can respond. Then I

suddenly feel the need to pray. I fetch my bible and start praying. Asking God to protect both me and my baby. And to be with us always. After 30 minutes of prayer I decide to have lunch then nap.

I am woken by laughter and I know it's Khwezi and Enzo.

Khwezi: hey.

I smile.

Khwezi: you sleep a lot.

Me: I was tired. You won't believe who called today.

Khwezi: who?

Me: your mom.

He narrowed his eyebrows.

Me: I know.

Khwezi: this doesn't add up. Why would she call you?

Me: no clue.

Khwezi: this woman is possessed.

Me: I know.

I get up and walk to the kitchen and start cooking supper. I suddenly feel sick but I ignore it. I finish then serve them.

Khwezi: I'll leave before midnight ok?

Me: sure.

I'll have to get used to this life really. As hard and weird as it is but since I claim to love him, I have to love everything that comes with him.

Khwezi: I'll be back early.

Me: you don't have to explain.

I take the dishes to the kitchen and wash them while he tucks in Enzo.

After washing the dishes I walk to the bedroom and he has already changed.

Me: are you really leaving me?

Khwezi: you know I have to work.

Me: please stay with me.

Khwezi: oh my God Mbali. Please don't don't do this to me. At least not now.

I pout but he just walks out leaving me there. I hear his car drive out and it's only then I have these terrible cramps. I scream and hold my stomach. It can't be happening it's too soon. So I grab my phone and call Khwezi. He picks up after a long time.

Khwezi: I'm busy Mbali.

I scream.

Khwezi: utheni!!!?

I don't respond I just cry and scream.

Khwezi: hang in there. I'm on my way.

He hangs up and within a few minutes he's back and I'm trying so hard to stand up.

Khwezi: are you okay?

He looks scared. And I think I'm more scared than he is.

Khwezi: I have to fetch Enzo.

He leaves and I am there praying and crying at the same time. He comes back and makes me stand up and there's blood. I scream more.

Khwezi: please don't do that. You're scaring me.

He carries me to the car and he speeds to the hospital. I am in so much pain, I can't even breathe properly.

We get to the hospital and the nurses and doctors rush to me.

"We're losing the baby" that's the last thing I heard before I blacked out..

[05/14, 18:35] Mk: Insert 37

.

I was going through a lot of emotions. From hearing the doctors telling me they are losing

him to the emergency C section. I can't believe my baby will be born at 28 weeks.

.

I wake up and I am exhausted. Khwezi and my mom are next to me. They both look exhausted. I clear my throat and they look at me.

Mom: baby.

I smile. My mom gives me water and I drink up. I feel my stomach and there is nothing.

Me: what happened to my baby?

Khwezi: he's a fighter. Just like his dad.

I smile.

I try to sit up and it hurts.

Mom: how are you feeling?

Me: I'm in pain. And I'm hungry.

Mom: I'll go call your dad. He should be on his way.

She walks out.

Khwezi: I thought I was going to lose you Mbali.
You scared me.

Me: I'm sorry. What did the doctor say?

Khwezi: they don't know the cause.

Me: I might be wrong but I think it's your mom. I
was healthy till she called.

He just looks at me.

Me: I might be wrong.

Khwezi: there is no such thing.

Me: can I go see him?

He looks a bit offish about what I said but I
don't care because it is the truth. My dad walks
in and he smiles.

Me: daddy.

Dad: how are you feeling?

Me: I'm ok just tired you?

Dad: good. Have you seen your son?

I shake my head and he comes to lift me up and places me in a wheelchair. I don't like it one bit. He wheels me to the NICU. My baby is the tiniest thing I've ever seen. Tubes all over.

Me: he's so tiny.

Dad: I know.

I am suddenly emotional and a tear just falls.

Me: I can't believe he survived this.

Dad: he's going to be a very strong boy.

I smile.

Dad: have you decided what to name him?

I think for a while.

Me: Luthandolwethu.

Dad: big name.

I laugh a little. Watch my baby then we go back to my ward. Khwezi has left and to be honest I

don't care. I need some time out. I have my lunch then medication and I fall asleep. I'm going to be here for a very long time so I have to get used to it.

I wake up and my phone is here charging so I'm guessing Khwezi brought it. I'm alone and already bored out of my mind. I decide to call Khwezi's mom. I just have to let everything go and focus on myself.

She picks up immediately.

K'mom: oh Mbali. Hello.

Me: how are you?

K'mom: I'm ok you?

Me: good. Uhm listen you won. I know you're behind every bad thing in my life and I'm letting go.

K'mom: what are you talking about?

Me: you know what I'm talking about. I'm letting your son go just like you've always wanted me

to. I'm leaving him. I just hope you're happy.

K'mom: that is not true. I'd never be happy knowing my son is unhappy.

Me: drop the act. I know you're happy.

She is quiet so I decide to hang up. I call the nurse and she helps me to get to my son. He's still in the same position I left him.

Me: hey baby. I wasn't expecting you so soon but I love you so much. You and your sister are the best thing that have ever happened to me. I'll pray that we both make it out of here alive. Ok?

I just watch him for a few minutes then go back to bed. I get to my room and my family is there, my mom, dad, Amanda and Khwezi. Enzo is with my brothers at home.

Me: oh hey.

Amanda: you look so weird.

Me: I'll look like this all my life so you have to

get used to it.

Dad: do you want us to bring you anything tomorrow?

Me: my pillow, my bean bag and lots of goodies. I get bored here.

Mom: I'll bring you Bible.

Me: thank you.

She kisses my forehead. We spend a few minutes together and then they leave but Khwezi stays. I use this as my chance to talk to him.

Khwezi: I can't believe I'm a father.

Me: you better believe it.

Khwezi: Lwethu is the most precious gift I've ever received.

I just smile.

Khwezi: I can't wait till you guys come.

I don't respond.

Khwezi: whats up?

Me: thing is I'm going back home. When Lwethu and I get discharged I'll go stay with my family again.

Hurt is written all over his face.

Me: I'm sorry Khwezi but I can't go on with this marriage let alone relationship, if your mother doesn't approve. You nearly lost your life because of her and now its my son. I don't care if you believe me or not but my gut can never be wrong.

Khwezi: we've been together for 8 months and my mom has never appoved but we pulled through.

Me: that was before she wanted to kill me.

Khwezi: Mbali you can't leave me because of my moms actions. We have a good thing going on. I can't let you raise our son alone.

Me: we can co-parent. It's worked with Siya so

I'm sure it'll work with you too.

Tears are already streaming down his face and that hurts me deep down. I love Khwezi too much and now because of this evil woman I have to let him go. I can't have this woman behind me all my life.

Khwezi: what do you want me to do?

Me: I want you to let me go. Move on. You can come visit Lwethu on a regular basis I won't stop you.

He wipes his tears and I just look away. I can't go back on my decision no matter how hard or tough it is.

Me: please excuse me, I need to sleep.

He doesn't say a word he just holds my hands.

Khwezi: I don't care what you say Mbali. I will not let you go. When you get out of here you will stay with me and we will get married. And be happy together. I'll do what I have to do for us

to be happy.

I don't want to look at him so I wait for him to let my hands go then I wipe my tears. He kisses my cheek then he leaves and I just break down...

[05/14, 18:35] Mk: Insert 38

.

A week went by and Khwezi has always been visiting Lwethu and not me. I may act like I don't care but deep down it hurts.

So its a Wednesday and it's during lunch. My friends pop in.

Siba: unjan mntase?

Me: I'm okay babes.

Buhle: you have to be okay. For you and Lwethu's sake.

Me: I am.

Buhle: and what did you do to Khwezi?

Me: nothing why?

Buhle: he's been moody for the past week.

Me: he'll be okay.

Buhle: Mbali no man can be okay with what you did. You can't just leave because of accusations.

Siba: he has to see you as the strong woman you are and not a wife that will leave him at his lowest.

I smile.

Me: since when did you two become smart?

Siba: we've always been smart. You just didn't notice.

Me: whatever.

We spent some time together then later I went to see Lwethu. Bad timing because Khwezi was also there. But I don't hate him, I would never

hate him.

Me: hey.

Khwezi: hi

He was crying which was weird. I go to him and hug him and he holds me real tight.

Me: what's up?

Khwezi: she's gone...

Me: who?

Khwezi : my mom.

I was hurt a little. I'm not that ruthless. She may have hurt me a couple of times but I don't hate her.

Me: you killed her?

He did talk about taking everything that was in our way out of the way so I had to ask him.

Khwezi: I would never do that Mbali.

Me: I was just asking. But you're going to be

okay I promise. It'll take time but you'll be ok.

He nods still holding me tight.

We spend time with Lwethu then I go back to my ward and Libo and my dad are there.

Libo: you smell like a man.

Me: it may be Lwethu.

Dad: we all know it's Khwezi. You can't stay away why don't you just go back to him.

Me: I need time.

Libo: men like Khwezi don't have time.

Me: whatever. He lost his mother.

Dad: God works in mysterious ways.

Libo just laughs.

Libo: which god?

Dad: me obviously.

Me: what did you do to her?

Dad: I killed her.

He says like he just stepped on an ant.

Me: why?

Dad: she tried to kill you. So why can't I do what she failed at?

Me: wow.

Libo: I'm sure your heart is as white as snow.

Me: no.

Dad: baby you'll have to get used to this life. We remove anything that doesn't make us happy or anything that hurts those we love. You do whatever you have to do to survive. You can't get married to Khwezi and not understand this. He'll have to kill to protect his family and you have to deal with that.

I just sink in my bed and fall asleep while they are still standing there.

.

My baby is now 3 months. Healthy and gaining

weight like any other normal kid.

Khwezi never took his mom's death well. Apparently he didn't work for a week or 2. After his healing we spoke a lot. Leading to our "reunion" if I may call it that. It was bound to happen anyway. But I didn't know it would be this soon.

It's February the following year and Lwethu and I are being discharged today. I have had it with hospitals. Khwezi and Chuma came to fetch us.

Me: aren't you supposed to at school?

Chuma: took a day off to see my nephew.

Me: matric is no childs play.

Khwezi: exactly what I told her.

Me: lies.

I take Lwethu and he is asleep and Khwezi carries my bags to the car. We drive to our home. Of course I'm moving back to our home. There is no other way.

Chuma: he is so big.

Me: I know.

Khwezi: premmy ka daddy.

Me: ha.a

I feed him and he sucks me like I haven't fed him in ages.

Khwezi: that used to be me a few months ago.

Chuma: sies mahn. I didn't need to know that.

Me: he sucks like his dad.

We both laugh and Chuma is disgusted.

Chuma: I'll be in the lounge.

She walks away. I finish feeding Lwethu and Khwezi helps burp him.

He is already sleepy so I hold him till he sleeps.

Khwezi: Enzo will be home soon.

Me: I know. I asked Amanda to deliver her clothes.

Khwezi: ok.

[05/14, 18:36] Mk: Insert 39

.

Since Lwethu is sleeping I decide to join him.

Me: please don't forget to fetch Enzo.

Khwezi: I'm on my way.

Me: good.

I fall asleep immediately and a few minutes later he decides to cry.

I look at him and his eyes are closed. The boy has drama.

We sleep again and I'm waken up by Enzo. I last saw my baby in January.

Enzo: mommy!!

I hug her real tight.

Me: I missed you.

Enzo: I missed you too. Can I see my brother?

She hops on the bed and she just smiles when she sees him.

Enzo: he's a beautiful baby.

Me: I know.

Khwezi: are you going to cook?

Me: please order something.

He nods then walks out. My phone rings and its Aphiwe. I haven't seen her since my birthday and baby shower.

Me: hey.

Aphiwe: koti wase khaya.

Me: how are you?

Aphiwe: I'm okay you?

Me: I'm good.

Aphiwe: I heard my nephew is home. And I saw pictures, he's the cutest thing ever.

Me: thank you. So when will you come see him?

Aphiwe: I'll be flying in during the weekend.

Me: good then.

Aphiwe: bye I love you.

Me: I love you too.

Khwezi walks in and he has a death stare.

Khwezi: and who was that?

Me: Aphiwe.

He smiles.

Me: jealousy doesn't look good on you.

He laughs.

Khwezi: so when are we getting married?

Me: I want a beach wedding. So I think we have to wait.

He rolls his eyes.

Khwezi: we can get married next month though.

Me: March is cold njena baby.

Khwezi: it's not. Even April is okay.

Me: let's make it April then.

Khwezi: next month we're having the traditional wedding.

Me: 2 weeks from now?

Khwezi: ewe I want you to be mine Mbali.

Me: I am yours.

Khwezi: you know what I mean.

Lwethu cries and Enzo carries him and tries to calm him down. It's the cutest thing ever. Enzo has always been jealous so I was kind of worried.

I take him and feed him. He's always hungry, it scares me sometimes.

.

So during the weekend Aphiwe came and she was great help not that Khwezi wasn't helping but Aphiwe just took over and I had time to rest.

She spent 5 days with us.

.

So it's March and as promised we were having our traditional wedding in Stutterheim klo Khwezi.

So on Thursday I woke up at 9. I had breakfast then fed Lwethu. We take a long bath together then get dressed. I have to go dress fitting. I had got a dress designed for the day. So I drove to Vincent and did my final fittings and Lwethu and I went to have lunch.

After lunch I went to fetch Enzo and we drive home.

Enzo: when are we leaving?

Me: Saturday.

Enzo: daddy yena?

Me: Friday.

Enzo: I wanna leave Friday.

Me: ha.a Enzokuhle.

She sulks and I really don't care.

We arrive at home and I start cleaning because Enzo is watching Lwethu. Khwezi comes home later than usual. I decide not to say anything about it. He was probably working since he won't be at work the next day.

He kisses my cheek then the kids.

Me: how was work?

Khwezi: hectic but nothing I can't handle.

Me: ohh.

Khwezi: can I see your dress?

Me: no. You'll see it on Saturday.

Khwezi: you're such a bore. Please pack for me.

Me: I'll help you but I won't do it for you.

Khwezi: yeah.

We have supper then I go help him pack and the

next day he leaves at 10. So I spend the rest of my morning with my kids.

The next day we wake up and bath then drive to my dads place.

Amanda: and when are you getting dressed?

Me: before we leave.

Amanda: we're running late already.

My friends walk in and they help me get dressed. Its an off shoulder mermaid dress with lace ruffles at the bottom. It has traditional print. I'm not a fan of make up so I get a natural look. My weave is all curled up and I look the part.

Libo: now I don't want you to leave me.

Me: come on Libo, I'll see you everyday.

Libo: I hardly see you now.

Me: we'll work it out.

He smiles then hugs me. We walk to the car and drive to Stutterheim. We meet with my

moms family in town then we drive to Khwezi's place. There are a lot of people and I start getting nervous. Haven't spoken to Khwezi since he left yesterday. So our families met and it was a very nice ceremony. I changed into my makoti attire and it did wonders to me. I was beyond beautiful.

Aphiwe: from now on you're no longer Mbali but Alu, Alunamida. Meaning the love this family has for you has no boundaries. We want you to feel at home.

I have mixed emotions but I don't want to cry. After the naming it's the whole lecture and what not. Before I know it I have to be in the kitchen.

I help the other ladies finish cooking. Then I serve Khwezi. He is with the other men so I greet.

Khwezi: you look so beautiful. You should stay in these for some time.

Me: I won't.

Khwezi: please.

Me: no.

Khwezi: how are you feeling?

Me: I'm ok.

Aphiwe walks to us and she is all smiles.

Aphiwe: Alu.

Me: hey.

Aphiwe: when are you guys leaving?

Khwezi: tomorrow morning.

Me: have you seen Lwethu? I have to feed him.

Aphiwe: he's with your mother.

Me: thanks.

Khwezi kisses me then I walk back to the kitchen and my mom walks in shortly and I feed my baby and he sleeps immediately afterwards. I am so tired but luckily there's help...

[05/14, 18:37] Mk: Insert 40(crop top)

.

I carry on cooking supper then Aphiwe walks in.

Aphiwe: have you two spoke?

She was referring to the other lady that was with me in the kitchen. I only knew she was Khanya.

Me: not really.

Aphiwe: she's our cousin's wife, Siviwe. They stay in King.

I smile.

Khanya: we've been too busy to chit chat.

She looks beautiful. Yellow bone with pink lips. She has a body to die for.

Aphiwe: please help her around. Please.

She smiles. Both of us are now smiling. I can tell she's shy.

Aphiwe: I'll leave you two.

She walks out.

Me: so how long have you been married?

Khanya: over a year now.

Me: how has it been?

Khanya: perfect. It's the best thing that's ever happened to me.

Me: wow.

Khanya: it has its rainy days though. And by rainy I mean storms. But you will pull through.

I'm suddenly nervous but I think I can handle that. We carry on chatting till we finish cooking supper than serve everyone. We have our supper in the kitchen then wash the dishes.

I feed my baby then burp him and we go to the flat outside. That's where we'll be sleeping. My feet are killing me. Enzo is no where to be found so I call Khwezi because his car is not here.

Khwezi: Alu.

I just smile.

Me: is Enzo with you?

Khwezi: yes my love. We're on our way back.

Me: ok please hurry. I miss you.

He chuckles then I hang up.

I change to my pjs then my husband walks in with Enzo.

Khwezi: you must be tired.

Me: I am.

He tucks Enzo in then kisses Lwethu.

Khwezi: kodwa baby umoshe umntanam.

Me: how?

Khwezi: this whole pouting thing.

Me: mxm. Where is mom?

Khwezi: I went to drop them off in town. I booked a BnB.

Me: you didn't have to.

Khwezi: I wanted to.

We spoke for some time then finally fell asleep. I woke up the next day did all my routines then at lunch we left. I didn't even get a chance to see my mom. We drove all the way home and I was fast asleep. Only woke up when I needed to feed Lwethu.

So we get home and I go to the bedroom and change to my pjs. I'm super tired.

Me: when am I going back to work?

Khwezi: you won't.

I open my eyes in shock.

Me: hayi Khwezi.

Khwezi: we spoke about this. When we get married you stop working. You have to look after my kids and the house.

Me: I can do that while I work.

Khwezi: let's not argue about this. You know

how it is. My dad would hate me if I made you work.

Me: Khwezi it's not normal.

Khwezi: my mom never worked, your step mom never worked and Zim also doesn't work.

Me: it's their choice.

He just looked at me.

Khwezi: I'm the man so I have to work for you.

Me: I don't want to depend on you. What if something happens. I need something I can fall back on.

He looks at me quite disappointed.

Khwezi: so you don't trust us?

Me: I do its just something we have to think about. You're a lawyer I'm sure you've seen stuff like this.

Khwezi: you won't leave me Siphosethu, no matter what and I won't leave you.

I know he's really angry when he calls me by my second name. His eyes are turning red and I'm starting to get scared.

Me: ok.

Khwezi: so you'll stay at home?

Me: I'll think about it.

He sits down and holds me real tight.

[05/14, 18:38] Mk: Insert 41

.

Lwethu cries and I am guessing he's hungry. He eats a lot lately. So I move away from Khwezi and attend to my baby. I feed him then go downstairs to cook supper. It's past 5 already.

Khwezi: I'll order something.

Me: no I have to get used to this. I'll be home all the time.

He frowns and I don't care. I make mac and cheese. And by 7 I'm done.

I serve them then I sit down to eat.

Enzo: I'm not going to school tomorrow.

Me: ohh.

Khwezi: you don't have to be so cold.

Me: I'm not cold.

I finish eating then wash the dishes. I needed to call my mom and ask her about this housewife thing. My mom was going to retire soon and I had to support her.

I go to the study and call my mom.

Mom: baby how are you?

Me: I'm not okay wena?

Mom: I'm ok. Whats up baby?

Me: please come visit.

Mom: when?

Me: soon mama I need you.

I start tearing up.

Mom: ok baby I'm on my way.

Me: ok.

I hang up and the minute I turn, Khwezi is standing by the door.

Khwezi: what's up?

I wipe my tears and he walks closer.

Khwezi: talk to me.

Me: nothing I just need my mom.

Khwezi: what's wrong?

Me: I'll speak to my mom.

He walks out and I go wait in the lounge. After about 3 hours a car hoots and I go open for her. She drives in and I just rush to her and throw myself to her.

Mom: whats wrong?

Me: come inside.

We walk inside and I make tea for her. And juice

for myself.

Mom: what's wrong?

Me: Khwezi says I should stop working.

Mom: why?

Me: apparently he can afford it and I have duties as a wife.

Mom: then you have to obey your husband.

Me: no. What happens when you retire or what happens when he decides to leave me?

Mom: you're doubting the love he has for you and you're doubting God.

Me: you sound just like him.

Mom: because it's true. There's a lot you can do besides work.

Me: let me go to bed. You'll sleep in the guest room. The one down the passage.

I walk upstairs and Khwezi is fast asleep so I join him. I wake up a few times to feed Lwethu.

Khwezi wakes up at 6 and I also get up to bath Enzo.

Enzo: I'm not going to school.

Me: ok.

I finish bathing her then go downstairs to make breakfast for everyone. Khwezi and my mom walk in. He comes over to me and kisses my cheek.

Khwezi: morning baby.

Me: morning.

I serve everyone and I go take a shower. Just so I don't cause another fight, get dressed in my makoti attire and head downstairs. Khwezi and Enzo have left. My mom is busy with Lwethu.

Me: are you staying over?

Mom: yes my love, I'll leave on Wednesday.

Me: ok. I just have to go meet my wedding planner then have lunch with a friend and I'll be

back. Should I take Lwethu with?

Mom: no I'll be bored.

Me: ok.

I take my car keys and leave. Drive to my wedding planner in Beacon Bay. I choose the decor and cakes and everything. Khwezi can't be here so I'll be doing everything on my own. After the whole planning I went to Vincent to meet with Zim. We were having lunch.

Zim: the makoti of the hour. You look stunning.

Me: thanks my love.

Zim: how are you?

Me: perfect you?

Zim: good. So what's bothering you?

Me: this whole house wife thing.

She laughs.

Zim: let him control you just this once. After this don't ever let it happen. Baby these men have a

rule, you get married to them you don't work, they provide for you. You're making Khwezi feel weak.

Me: but Zim, I don't want to depend on him. What if he leaves me.

Zim: Anda and I aren't married, he gives me allowance every month and I save half of it for days like that. So whenever he leaves me I'll have something to fall back on plus I have my degree. And Khwezi would never leave you.

Me: and how do you know?

Zim: just trust him.

Me: and I think he's cheating.

Zim: don't confront him till you get evidence.

Me: he doesn't touch me anymore.

Zim: Mbali he probably gets tired.

Me: he works from 8 to 4 what could possibly tire him out. Unless he gets it from somewhere

else.

Zim: yho. Babe that's hectic.

Me: if I ever find out he is. I'll ruin him.

Zim: and I'll help you.

We finish eating and she pays the bill and we drive our separate ways. I get home at 3 and I'm exhausted.

Mom: I've already started cooking.

Me: ok.

Mom: how did the wedding planning go?

Me: it went well.

I go take a mini nap then at 4 I wake up and take a shower then my pjs.

Khwezi walks in.

Khwezi: my beautiful wife. How was your day?

Me: good.

Khwezi: and the wedding planning?

Me: it went well.

Khwezi: I'm glad.

Me: uhm Khwezi, I thought about what you said and I'll stay at home and be the perfect housewife.

He looks at me like I've said the wrong words.

Me: ok. Stay at home mom then.

Khwezi: really?

Me: yeah. I mean you did say you can afford and plus I have to obey.

He smiles.

Khwezi: I wish my mom was here to see how lovely you are.

I look away and walk to the dressing table. I can't let Khwezi find out my dad killed his mom....

[05/14, 18:38] Mk: Insert 42

.

Khwezi and I are on good terms. And I realized I'm actually being stupid thinking he's cheating. He spends all his time with his family or at work.

So it April, the Saturday of the wedding. It's weird how time flies. Last year this time we were celebrating a month together and now we are getting married.

I'm at my dad's place getting dressed.

My mom and Amanda are civil just for today. My mom helps me get dressed. Then my make up lady arrives. She does my hair and make up.

Mom: you look beautiful baby.

Me: thank you.

My dress is a white boob tubed mermaid dress, with lots of ruffles at the bottom and a long veil. My hair is in a messy bun.

Amanda: aren't you hungry?

Me: can I just have muesli.

Amanda: I'll go get it for you.

She rushes downstairs and it's just me and my mom.

Mom: I won't say a lot, but I just want you to make me proud.

Me: I will.

Mom: always obey your husband and don't make him feel small. I hope that was the last time you called me with a problem. Next time deal with it on your own.

I nod.

Amanda walks in and I have my breakfast. She helps me with my shoes then my mom feeds Lwethu. My baby is already 5 months.

Siba walks in and she looks stunning. Dressed in her royal blue dress. She's my maid of honor and Zim, Buhle, Chuma and Aphiwe are the bridesmaids. The best man is Anda with Samkelo, Libo, Sbu and Nathan being the

groomsmen.

Siba: oh my God, Mbali you look gorgeous.

Me: thanks.

Siba: how are you feeling?

Me: I'm ok just nervous.

We're already running late so we leave immediately when I'm done.

We get to the church and I start getting nervous. There is no turning back.

The girls walk down the aisle first and it's just me and my dad.

Dad: you know you can always turn back.

Me: I know.

Dad: we can run together.

Me: nah, I want to get this done.

Dad: you'll always be my baby, I hope you know that.

Me: I do.

He kisses my forehead and we walk in, my stomach is in knots.

Khwezi looks absolutely stunning in his black tux. He smiles when he sees me.

We finally arrive and my dad hands me over. My tears start building up.

I stand and he holds my hands while the pastor preaches before we exchange our vows.

Pastor: Khwezi you can go first.

He looks at me then smiles.

Khwezi: We met in a very unusual way. Then you decided to ask me out.

The people laughed and I was so embarrassed.

Khwezi: we've been through hell but we made it out alive. I loved you from the very first day I saw you but you couldn't wait to get your claws inside me*I giggle*. I love you too much. Thank

you for the beautiful gift you gave me. I appreciate it. Thank you for loving me at my worst and at my highest. From this day going forward I vow to be a loving husband, father and brother. I will always respect your wishes and put words into action. I promise to love you at your lowest and appreciate you always, to treat you as an equal, always be honest no matter what. I love you.

By the time he finishes I am so emotional, I can't even think of anything to say.

Me: You've said most of the stuff I was planning to say. As you always say, great minds think alike. Baby I wasn't expecting to be yours so soon but it happened and I'm glad. I want you to be proud to call me your wife. Never disappoint you in any way. I know I can be dramatic and hard headed sometimes but I'm willing to change. I promise to love and care for you and our children. Be a supportive and loving wife. Stand by you always. I won't promise you

perfect but I do promise you good. As hard as it may be I will stand by you and we can work it out. I'm no longer "I" but "we". From today we're a team. I promise to obey and submit to you always.

I can't go any further because of the tears. We exchange rings and soon the ceremony is over. The weather is not so pleasant but we take a few pictures at the beach then at the garden. After all that we rush to reception and everyone shares their speeches. By the time it's midnight we are already boarding our plane to Mozambique. That's were our honeymoon was. We spent 2 weeks then came back. I missed my kids too much that I wasn't even enjoying the holiday anymore...

[05/14, 18:39] Mk: Insert 43

.

We got back from our honeymoon and went to our home.

Khwezi: when are we fetching the kids?

Me: later.

It was 11 on a Saturday morning.

We spent the morning unpacking and cleaning. Then at 3 we went to fetch our kids from my place. We park outside and walk in. I never knock so I just open the door.

Me: family!!

Khwezi was holding my hand the whole time.

Dad: we're at the back!!

We walk to the back and they are having lunch. Enzo runs to Khwezi while I go hug the rest of the family.

Amanda: you look so beautiful, you've gained too.

Me: it's only been two weeks.

Libo: a lot can happen in 2 weeks.

Dad: and you know that from experience. So

how was the honeymoon?

We look at each and smile.

Libo: nihambe ekhaya.

We laugh.

Me: the honeymoon was great actually. We traveled a lot, partied and everything else.

Nathan: trust Khwezi when it comes to parties.

We laugh.

Dad: this is probably the last time you see me.

Me: why?

Dad: mission 201, your husband will explain everything to you.

Me: how long will you be gone?

Dad: a very long time, 4 to 5 months.

Me: at least you won't miss my birthday.

He chuckles.

Me: but seriously though, I'll miss you. Can we

skype?

Dad: not really but as I said your husband will explain.

Me: ok.

Khwezi: is my dad also going?

Dad: yeah its just the old men this time. I couldn't allow you guys to go. Especially since one of you just got married to my daughter.

This could only mean that Khwezi also goes on these missions and he's never told me once.

We talk for some time then Amanda helps me pack for the kids. My dad and I have a moment. I'm an emotional wreck so I cry over everything.

Dad: it's not dangerous, trust me. I might be back sooner.

Me: when are you leaving?

Dad: Monday night.

Me: I'll make lunch tomorrow then, for the whole

family. So you can have a proper send off.

Dad: thank you baby.

He kisses my forehead then we leave.

Khwezi: you're such a cry baby.

Me: what if he dies.

Khwezi: he won't. It's not so dangerous.

I nod.

Khwezi: plus one day it'll be my turn.

Me: please let's not talk about that.

Khwezi: we're going to my dad.

Me: ok.

Enzo: daddy what are we having for supper?

Khwezi: you should ask mommy that.

She just looks at me.

Me: daddy will order something.

Khwezi: Lwethu is so quiet.

I look at him and he's fast asleep with his pouted lips.

We arrive at his place and walked inside with Lwethu in my arms. The door immediately opens and it's his dad which is weird. Chuma usually opens.

We greet then go to the lounge.

Khwezi: where's Chuma?

K'dad: locked in her bedroom.

Me: let me go check on her.

I walk upstairs and knock and she let's me in. She's reading a book.

Me: hey.

Chuma: hey, you guys are back.

Me: yeah. A few hours ago.

Chuma: how was it?

Me: great actually. How's matric treating you?

Chuma: stressful but nothing I can't handle.

Me: good. Having a positive mindset is good.

Khwezi and his dad walk in.

Khwezi: Chuma start packing.

I look at him.

Khwezi: she can't stay alone while we're family.

Me: oh you're also leaving. Come let's pack.

I place Lwethu on the bed then we start packing.

At 7 we leave.

Me: what are we having for supper?

Enzo: same question I asked.

Me: Chuma what would you like to eat?

Chuma: I just want a chicken salad.

We drive to Steers, buy burgers and her chicken salad then we drive back home. Everyone eats then we go to bed. Lwethu is in between us.

Khwezi: Lwethu should sleep in the nursery.

Me: baby you're so mean, it's just one day.

Khwezi: but I want you next to me.

Me: I am.

Khwezi: ha.a he's going to his room.

So he stands up and takes Lwethu to his room, comes back and cuddles on me. We fall asleep.

I wake up the next day take a long shower, wear denim shorts and a sports bra then my apron.

I go downstairs then play music and start cooking lunch. I have to outdo myself because a lot of people are coming over.

Khwezi walks in.

Khwezi: Mrs Ngoma.

Me: Mr Ngoma.

He kisses me passionately then places me on the kitchen counter. We are so deep in it when Enzo walks in.

Enzo: ohhhkk.

Khwezi carries on then I pull out.

Me: hey baby.

Enzo: sies!

Khwezi: sorry. Baby, Anda and Zim are also coming over.

I frown.

Me: This was for our parents only.

Khwezi: but one of the old men kind of told him and Anda is like a brother to me.

Me: I'm not against him coming, so chill and get me off here.

He chuckles and puts me down.

Enzo: breakfast?

Me: coming right up.

Enzo: awu fish.e nje.

Me: allow me, this is my house.

I pour cereal for them then I carry on cooking. I

go check on Lwethu and Khwezi feeds him. I no longer breastfeed since I've been gone for too long. He got used to formula.

Me: Enzo please go call Chuma.

She runs upstairs and comes back shortly.

Enzo: she's showering.

I nod and carry on. By 12 I'm done and the table is set. Khwezi's dad arrives first and I go change into something decent. By the time I get back most of the family is there.

Me: afternoon family.

Amanda: you look stunning.

I am dress in black below the knee bodycon dress. That's lacey at the top. And my maroon heels.

Me: thank you. You can serve yourselves.

They do that and everyone starts digging in.

Dad: and since when do you cook delicious

food?

Libo: same question I was about to ask.

Khwezi: my wife can cook.

Me: tell them.

Anda: you should teach a few people.

We laugh.

Me: don't you dare. This is my friend we're talking about.

Zim: let him make fun of my cooking. We'll see who will laugh last.

Me: tell him. Chuma you're so quiet.

Chuma: I'm not.

We walk to the kitchen together and she starts crying. I hold her real tight.

Me: whats wrong?

Chuma: Khwezi is going to kill me.

Me: he won't trust me.

Chuma: I'm pregnant.

I freeze and just comfort her. Khwezi is really going to kill someone...

[05/14, 18:39] Mk: Insert 44

.

After comforting Chuma she finally calmed down and she looked at me.

Me: just go lie down ok? I'll handle your brother.

She nods and walks away. I let out a sigh and go back to the dining area.

Libo: what happened to Chuma?

Me: she went to lie down.

He looks at Nathan and the both have a straight face afterwards. I am concerned but I won't entertain it. They start leaving and I wash the dishes with Khwezi helping me.

Khwezi: when last did you speak to your friends?

Me: I've been busy since we got back.

Khwezi: yeah I noticed. But don't push them aside.

Me: I won't.

I want to tell him but I'm scared so I let it rest.

.

The next day Chuma returns from school with Enzo and Khwezi. Lwethu is in the nursery.

Me: should I run a bath for you?

Khwezi: I'll take a shower before we sleep.

I nod and we walk to our bedroom.

Me: how was your day?

Khwezi: very long but ok.

Me: ok.

He takes his shoes off then I get closer.

Me: Uhm there's something I need to talk to you about.

He looks at me very attentively.

Me: uhm I don't want you getting angry. Well you have every right to be but please don't do anything stupid.

Khwezi: just tell me what's going on.

Me: uhm Chuma is pregnant.

He looks at me then chuckles.

Khwezi: as in my sister?

I nod and he gets up but I stop him.

Khwezi: let go of me.

Me: baby you aren't thinking straight. You'll regret this, just talk to her like a normal adult.

He breathes then goes sit down and he calls her. Chuma walks in and stands by the door while I sit on Khwezi's lap.

Khwezi: you have something to tell me.

Chuma: it was an accident.

Khwezi: Chuma how many times did Aphiwe and I tell you about condoms? I waited till I was

28 to have my first born and you aren't even 18 yet and you're pregnant.

Chuma: I'm sorry.

I keep rubbing his back to calm him down.

Khwezi: do you even know who the father is?

She nods.

Khwezi: I expect a name.

Chuma: Libo.

Us: Libo!?

Khwezi is now fuming.

Khwezi: Libo as in Mbali's brother?

She nods and I just cover my mouth. I don't know when but I'm on the bed and Khwezi has slapped her.

Khwezi: he's old enough to be you big brother.

She's in tears and I feel sorry for her. He opens the door then leaves.

.

Khwezi..

I am angry. How could Libo do this to my baby sister? Chuma is not even 18 yet and here she is pregnant with 29 year olds child. To make matters worse, Chuma grew up in front of him and he treated her like his baby sister and now that he feels like it, he makes her pregnant.

I am using my wife's car so I have the house keys. I open the gate and walk in the front door to his room. He is pacing up and down and I'm assuming Chuma told him. I punch him and he falls to the ground. I punch him several times till I see blood then I stop and get up.

Me: Libongwe how could you? How could you do this to me?

Libo: I never forced her.

I punch him again.

Libo: let's talk like adults mahn Khwezi.

I don't have time for his nonsense.

Me: what were you thinking?

Libo: Chuma is old enough to make her own decisions and she chose me and I chose her too. We're in love and we have a good thing going on.

The anger inside me builds up. How could he be so calm after he did this to me.

Me: you're enjoying this aren't you?

Libo: I'm not enjoying anything. It is what it is.

I breathe.

Libo: I'm not fighting you. Let's fix this like brothers and all of us will be happy.

Me: my family won't allow this madness.

Libo: then we'll have to kill them too.

He is so calm and I am irritated.

Me: meaning?

.

Mbali...

It's already dark outside and I've put the kids to bed, just waiting for Khwezi in the lounge. He's been gone for too long and I'm worried. It's after 9 and the door opens. He enters after some time.

Me: where have you been?

He smells of alcohol and I am nervous. I've never seen Khwezi drunk. He gets closer to me.

Khwezi: tell me Mbali, do you really love me or are you guilty?

Me: you know I love you.

Khwezi: I actually don't. How could you Mbali?

Me: what did I do?

He slaps the life out of me and I just hold my cheek. It's burning.

Me: ouch!

He holds me by my gown and throws me on the floor and he starts kicking me slapping me.

Khwezi: you watched me mourn my mother, kept telling me I'd find her killers meanwhile you knew your father did this. How evil can you be?

He lifts me up by my gown and he holds me close to him.

Khwezi: I'll kill you Mbali Ngoma. I will kill you and feed you to your family.

He throws me on the couch and he walks away. I am in tears and scared for dear life...

[05/14, 18:39] Mk: Insert 45

.

I touch my nose and there's blood. I reach for my phone and call my dad and it rings to voice mail. I try again and it's the same result. I don't give up, after the third time he answers.

Dad: Mbali I am busy.

I just let it all out.

Dad: whats wrong?

Me: he hit me dad. He hit me over and over again.

Dad: that bastard...

He hung up.

I checked the time and it was after 11. I walked to the guest room downstairs and took a bath. I needed it to soothe my body. I wore a gown then slept.

The next morning I woke up to a loud noise I got up and walked to the lounge. My dad and Khwezi were arguing. He really made a quick you turn.

Dad: who gave you the right to touch my daughter?

Khwezi looked at me and he was fuming.

Dad: Khwezi answer me before I kill you.

He gets closer and holds him by his shirt against the wall. He punches him a few times then strangles him.

Dad: this is my daughter not a punching bag.

He pulls a gun and points it to his head.

Dad: what do you have to say?

Khwezi: Ray I'm sorry. You don't have to do this. I was drunk and angry.

Me: dad just let him go.

He is about to pull the trigger when I scream. I couldn't let him do that. We may have had our fight but I couldn't hate him over that.

He let's go of him and moves closer to me.

Dad: only because you asked me to.

Me: it's fine.

He is about to leave when I stop him.

Me: dad I'm leaving with you.

Khwezi: Alu you don't have to leave.

I don't care what he says, but I am leaving.

I walk upstairs and pack a few clothes for myself and my daughter then I head to the nursery and pack Lwethu's bag. I walk downstairs with him and my dad takes my stuff to my car.

Khwezi: Mbali I'm sorry, I was angry.

I walk upstairs and he follows me.

Khwezi: Mbali please don't leave.

I carry Enzo downstairs and we leave. My dad is driving, apparently a friend brought him over. We get home and I stay in the car while my dad takes everything inside. Libo walks to my car and he immediately hugs me.

Libo: I'm so sorry sis. If it wasn't for my big mouth, you'd be at home with your husband.

Me: it's ok Libo. He was going to find out anyway.

I could never be angry at Libo. He is my brother and he showed me who Khwezi really is. I won't leave him, it's not even something I'm thinking about. I just need time away from him.

Libo: it's not okay Mbali.

Me: Libo it is. We'll get through this and probably forget it ever happened.

He nods then lets go of me. I walk inside and go to my bedroom. For the first time since this incident I look myself in the mirror and my left eye is badly bruised. My face is swollen and my whole body hurts. I go downstairs for breakfast then I take my pills and immediately pass out.

It's the third day since I've come home and I'm healing perfectly. Khwezi has been calling non-stop but seriously I don't care. I need time away from him. My dad left again so it was just Amanda and my brothers.

It's Friday morning and I have a date with Zim. She's the only person I told about the whole

incident. I know Siba is my best friend but I can't really open up about other stuff to her without having to reveal everything.

I take a shower, get dressed in jeans and a off shoulder bodysuit with my black stiletto. I look too good. I walk downstairs and have breakfast. Amanda is with Lwethu. She's been helping me with both Lwethu and Enzo.

At 11 I leave for Vincent. I get there and wait for Zim. She is late for the first time.

She arrives after 30 minutes looking dazzling as always.

Zim: I'm sorry.

Me: it's fine.

We order and start eating.

Zim: are you okay?

Me: yep I'm getting there.

Zim: are you sure?

Me: yes.

Zim: don't you miss him?

Me: I do but I can't just go back to him like nothing happened.

Zim: I know babe but you guys are married now. Yoi can't run away every time you guys have a disagreement. You need to fix it.

Me: I know my love but I just needed time away.

Zim: for how long?

Me: I don't know.

Zim: mhh.

We finish eating and she offers to pay.

Zim: I'll go get my wallet in the car.

Me: it's fine Zim I'll pay.

Zim: I invited you and made you wait so it's only fair.

Me: ok.

She gets up and the minute I look up, Khwezi walks towards me. I didn't know Zim had that in her. She can't just set me up.

Khwezi: how are you?

Me: I'm ok.

Khwezi: I'm ok too. Uhm can I sit?

I nod and he sits opposite me.

Khwezi: why don't you want to talk to me?

Me: I don't have anything to say to you now.

Khwezi: but I want to apologize. Mbali I am sorry, I regret doing what I did, I really do but I need you to hear me out.

Me: ok.

Khwezi: Alu, please don't do this to me. I can't survive another day without you.

Me: Khwezi can I ask you a question?

He nods.

Me: if the tables were turned. Let's say your mom ended up killing me, would you have done the same thing to her? I need your honesty.

He looks at me for a very long time before he swallows hard.

Me: I guess that answers my question.

Khwezi: I think I would have done the same thing.

Me: don't lie.

Khwezi: I'm being honest.

Me: mhh. You made a promise in front of hundreds of people to always protect me not even a month down the line and I need protection from you.

Khwezi: forgive me, this won't ever happen again I promise.

Me: I forgave you the minute you let go of me. I just need time away from you.

Khwezi: we're married. We need to communicate.

Me: we are communicating. Just give me time.

He nods.

I won't jump when he tells me to. We may be married but I need time to breathe before I walk into that house again. I am still young and trying to be a good wife so this will all take time...

[05/15, 09:16] Mk: Insert 46

.

Khwezi.

After my lunch with Mbali I went to see Anda. He was like a brother to me so he'd know what to say to me at times like these.

I drive to his workplace and talk to the

receptionist.

Her: Mr Ngoma

She says that with a smile.

Me: is Anda in his office?

Her: yes.

I walk to his office and he looks busy.

Me: Mr CEO

Anda: brother.

Me: how are you?

I sit opposite him and he looks at me.

Anda: how did the lunch go?

Me: I don't know, she says she needs time away from me.

Anda: and?

Me: Anda I can't give her time. I need my family back.

Anda: to be honest I think you need help. You

did the same thing to Zintle so many times.

Me: I know. I thought I had it all sorted out after Zintle but I just lost it.

Anda: you need to control yourself. You can't beat her around everytime she does something wrong. That's what ended my marriage and you know that. I don't want you to lose your wife because of something you need have prevented.

I nod. I mean I was there for Anda when he lost his wife and he wasn't ok at all. He turned to alcohol and girls and that nearly destroyed him as a person but lucky for him, he met Zim who changed his life completely. I can't even begin to imagine my life without Mbali or to watch another man raising my son because I was selfish.

Me: ok I'll start therapy.

Anda: that's good for you bro. I appreciate that you take my advice seriously. Ah on the brighter side, there's a couples outing soon. Just us

guys and our women.

Me: nothing bright about that.

Anda: hopefully by then Mbali will be home.

Me: I hope so too.

Anda: fight for her.

Me: I will.

We say our goodbyes and I decide to go back to work.

After work I drive home and my wife's car is parked in the driveway which is weird. I park and get inside the house. Mbali is sitting on the high chairs drinking wine. My eyes must be deceiving me...

.

Mbali

I decided to go back to my house, I can't run away forever.

I can tell Khwezi is shocked to see me. I get up

and attend to my pots.

Khwezi: you're back?

Me: yes.

Khwezi: wow. Thank you Alu, I promise it won't happen again. I'll see a therapist.

Me: good then.

He smiles and comes to hug me. My body freezes immediately and he sees it and he immediately pulls out.

Khwezi: I'm sorry.

I nod.

Khwezi: is Chuma upstairs?

Me: yes.

She always wants to be alone since the whole incident happened.

I finish cooking then I serve supper. Everyone is around the table.

Chuma: uhm I want to apologize for the trouble I caused. It was not my intention. Libo and I just happened.

Me: it's fine. It was going to happen anyway.

She nods and I feed Lwethu while I finish off my supper. Chuma and I wash the dishes.

Chuma: would I be wrong if I'd consider getting an abortion?

Me: it's your choice and body. The baby will be your responsibility. But the poor baby is innocent and it could be your last.

Chuma: I'm in matric, I can't afford to stress like this.

Me: but Chuma did it have to be Libo?

Chuma: it just happened.

Me: do you guys still communicate?

She nods.

We finish off and I go to bed. Khwezi walks in

minutes later. He just put the kids to bed.

Khwezi: I'm taking a bath, wanna join me?

I nod and he goes to the bathroom.

We are in the bath tub and I've tried to loosen up.

Khwezi: uhm Mbali you know when I first met you I didn't want to introduce you to my other life. I was scared I might lose you but you accepted me.

I just smile.

Khwezi: the guys are planning a weekend away for the whole gang and it's a couples outing type of thing. Are you game?

I've only met my step mom and Zim. I don't know the other women at all. Some were at my wedding but I never got a chance to speak to them or get introduced to them. This would probably make me and them close and I'll end up neglecting my friends. But we'll cross that

bridge when we get to it.

Me: yeah why not.

He smiles.

He washes my bag and I wash his then we get out of the bath tub to dry ourselves.

Khwezi walks around naked which always does things to me but today I can't control myself.

After this whole drama we need something that will take us back to what we used to be.

He walks to my direction and I obviously move closer to him.

He is standing in front of me and things couldn't get any awkward.

I hold the back of his neck with both of my hands and he looks me straight in the eye. I do the same.

Me: make love to me.

Without even hesitating he holds my butt in his

hands and he walks me to the wall.

That's where it usually all starts. Before even knowing he kisses me senseless. He lifts me up and places me against the wall with my legs around his waist.

Khwezi: I missed you.

He doesn't even wait for me to respond he puts in a finger and that immediately sent shivers down my spine. He inserts himself and I jump a bit.

It is slow and sweet just exactly what I had in mind. He moves inside me and my eyes roll to the back of my head. I missed this so much. He feels me coming then before I explode he pulls out and carries me to the bed. He enters me again and this time it's hard.

I am screaming and moaning like nobody is in the house. After what seems like forever we are both exhausted and I am lying on his chest.

Khwezi: Alu?

Me: mhh?

Khwezi: thank you. Thank you for forgiving me.

Me: it's fine Khwezi.

He kisses the top of my head and I doze off...

[05/15, 09:22] Mk: Insert 47

.

I wake up the next morning and I am alone in bed. I make the bed then go take a shower.

After my shower I wear my tight, ugg boots and my baggy jersey.

My phone rings and its Siya. We haven't spoken in a while since he told me he'd be out of town for most weekends.

Me: Siya.

Siya: how are you?

Me: I'm good you?

Siya: good. Uhm I'm in town and I'd like to know if I can have Enzo for the rest of the weekend.

Me: Enzo has never slept over.

Siya: she will have to do it, sooner or later.

Me: definitely not now.

Siya: Mbali you are raising my daughter with another man the least you could do is let me see her whenever I want.

Me: excuse me!? I am still her mother and we had terms.

Siya: I haven't seen her in weeks the least you could do is give me my daughter for 2 days. Please.

Me: give me a few minutes I'll get back to you.

I hang up and I walk downstairs. It smells divine. I get to the kitchen and the whole family is there.

Me: good morning family.

Them: morning.

Chuma: you look good.

Me: thanks my love.

We have breakfast and after breakfast Khwezi washes the dishes and I help him.

Me: Siya called.

Khwezi: mhh?

Me: he wants Enzo to spend the rest of the weekend with him.

Khwezi: what do you say?

Me: I don't know babe. I was hoping you'd help me. I don't trust that Lelethu with my daughter.

Khwezi: does he know that?

Me: I think so.

Khwezi: but you're kind of being unfair. Siya has to live knowing I'm with his daughter every day and you can't give him a weekend with his daughter.

I sigh. He's right but it's different.

I call Siya and he says he's on his way. I decide to call Siba and she doesn't reply, which is weird. I call Buhle and it's the same thing. I guess they're angry at me for neglecting them. It's not like it was intentional.

Siya arrives to fetch Enzo and Khwezi helps her. It's after 1 and I'm bored so I get a bottle of red wine and a book. I am in the lounge reading my book when my phone rings and I am hoping it's my friends but it's Aphiwe.

Me: AP

Aphiwe: my sister in law, how are you?

Me: good you?

Aphiwe: good. I heard about what happened between you and my brother. I'm sorry.

Me: it's fine.

Aphiwe: Khwezi has a problem but I know he'll get through it with you.

Me: only if he really wants to be with me.

Aphiwe: he does. Can you do me a favour.

Me: I'm listening.

Aphiwe: I want you guys to look after my sister. She can't stay with my dad alone. She needs a mother figure and I think you can do that.

Me: she is family so I will look after her.

Aphiwe: by look after her I mean please stay with her.

Me: does your brother know?

Aphiwe: not yet. I'll call him just now.

Me: ok.

We speak for a while then I watch tv. Lwethu is with his dad so I'm free for the day.

I start making supper, cottage pie it is. I am really lazy. Khwezi walks in with Lwethu.

Khwezi: you're busy.

Me: I am.

Khwezi: we should get a helper.

Me: for?

Khwezi: the cleaning and everything.

Me: and what will I do all day?

Khwezi: watch TV.

He smiles and I am irritated already. I can't spend the rest of my life watching tv everyday.

We have supper and go to bed early.

The next morning we all wake up and go to church. Yes, Khwezi finally went to church. I've never imagined him to be the church goer but I left him with no choice.

After church I decide to go visit my friend. Siba hasn't been answering my calls for the whole weekend. I park and I go knock, she is with Buhle so lucky me.

Me: molweni?

Them: hi.

Me: how are you guys?

Siba: perfect you?

Me: I'm ok.

I sit down and they both look at me which is weird.

Me: uhm I've been trying to call you guys for the whole weekend.

Buhle: we know.

Me: oh?

Siba: Mbali you have changed. You have new friends now and a new lifestyle. You hardly have time for us.

Me: I have been busy.

Buhle: you always have time for Zim.

Me: that is not true.

Siba: I knew you'd say that.

Me: I am a mother of two, I just got back from

my honeymoon. I've had problems to deal with.
They are both quiet.

Me: you have to understand I'm married now
and I can't do some of the stuff we used to do
together.

Buhle: we know that. But Mbali you're
neglecting us. We've been together for so long
and now that you meet new people you neglect
us.

I roll my eyes. I don't really have time for
everything.

Me: I'm sorry then. I'll spend all the time I have
with you guys.

They smile and we hug and continue chatting.

Buhle: so you're telling me Libo left me for a 17
year old.

We laughed.

Siba: yho thats hectic. And what did Khwezi say?

Me: all I can tell you is Libo is healing.

Buhle: wow. I still can't believe this.

Me: but Buhle you pushed him away. You can't blame him. He begged for so long and guys like him don't do that. So he moved on.

Siba: would he take you back though?

Me: I don't know by the looks of things he's happy with Chuma.

Buhle: ouch!

Me: sorry.

We chat for a few minutes and I decide to call it a day. I have to cook supper. And plus I didn't have lunch with my family which is unacceptable.

So I drive to Spar and buy milk tart then I drive home. My phone rings and I don't recognize the number.

Me: hello.

"Hey my love. Uhm Mbali I love you okay? No matter what happens just know that, ok my love? I've always loved you and I'll die loving you. "

I am in tears not knowing what this call meant. I can't lose him now. Noo... I speed home....

[05/15, 09:25] Mk: Insert 48

.

I get home and rush inside. Khwezi has Lwethu on his chest and he is reading a book.

Me: Khwezi!!

Khwezi: shh. I've just put him to sleep.

Me: it's important. I need my dad. I need to get to where he is.

Khwezi: why?

He puts Lwethu on the couch and comes to me.

Me: he called. I think he's in danger.

Khwezi: you can't go there, it's not safe.

Me: Khwezi you told me it's not dangerous. Why can't I go?

Khwezi: baby you can't go there. You'll die. And what do you expect me to tell our kids?

I keep quiet.

Khwezi: Mbali I know you're thinking of going against my word but I won't let you.

Me: I'll go take a nap.

I walk upstairs. I can't just wait for my dad to be declared dead. I call Libo, I know for a fact that he'll help me.

Libo: sister.

I tell him the whole story.

Libo: woah. Uhm ok let's leave tonight at 6. We'll get there before midnight.

Me: Uhm okay then.

Libo: I'll pick you up.

I hang up and take a nap. I wake up at 5 when

Libo calls. I run to the kitchen and leave. The minute I enter we drive off.

Libo: Khwezi is going to hate me.

Me: he will have to understand Libo.

Libo: we could have sent help.

Me: Libongwe I want to be therefor my dad.

We get to the airport and board the private jet. It's my first time and I can't cherish he moment. The minute we take off I send Khwezi a message.

.

Its 23:30 and we arrive at Nairobi. We walk out and a car is already waiting for us. We drive to this huge deserted house. There are security guards everywhere. I have so many missed calls from Khwezi so I get back to him.

Khwezi: woman, why do you have to be so stubborn? I am worried sick about you.

Me: I'm sorry but I had to do it.

Khwezi: what do you know Mbali. I swear if you die I won't even bother to bury you.

I want to laugh but I hold it in. He's really angry.

Me: sorry.

I hang up and we walk into the house. Khwezi's dad noticed me first and my dad is lying on the small bed.

Me: daddy.

I run to him and he is angry to see me.

Dad: Mbali'entle what the hell are you doing here?

Me: you scared me.

K'dad: you aren't allowed to be here.

Me: I had to see my dad.

I scan his body and he has a bandage on his stomach.

Dad: Mbali I want you to go back to South Africa and forget this place.

Me: but dad you scared me how was I supposed to focus after what you said? I just found you, I can't lose you now.

K'dad: the other men are probably on their way they can't find her here.

Me: I'll leave.

My dad is still angry but I don't care.

Libo and I are about to walk out when we hear tyres screeching outside and then gun shots. I hold on to my brother.

K'dad: Libo don't just stand there, find an exit.

He pulls me to the back but I stand in front of my dad who know has a gun in his hand and a bulletproof vest.

Me: daddy please don't leave me. I still need you.

He looks at me and his eyes soften. I can tell

he's no longer angry.

K'dad: Alunamida go! Nx

My dad holds my hands and kisses my forehead then the door opens. Libo pulls me to the back but that door also opens. They are holding huge guns. I nearly pee myself.

Guy: down!!

I want to lie down but Libo holds me tight.

Libo: don't..

He says that in a whisper.

I already have tears streaming down my face.

Something hits my feet and Libo picks up a gun and he starts shooting. I am behind him and scared for dear life. Bullets are flying everywhere. After what seems like forever there are a few dead bodies and I am in tears holding on to Libo.

Someone holds me from behind and I know it's

my dad. He hugs me real tight and I cry in his arms.

Me: I'm sorry.

Dad: it's fine my angel. It's all over now. We'll both be going home tomorrow ok?

I nod.

We walk out together. And he takes me to a car and he is driving.

Dad: yazi uyaphapha.

It's so weird when he speaks Xhosa.

Me: mxm.

Dad: you could have died.

Me: and Khwezi already told me if I die he won't bury me.

He chuckles.

Dad: Khwezi and I should teach you a few stuff, you need to know how to defend yourself.

Me: ah no.

Dad: I'm telling you Mbali. Marrying Khwezi comes with stuff like this. You have to be prepared.

Me: uh ok then daddy.

We arrive at the hotel and we check in. It's going to be tough...

[05/15, 09:28] Mk: Insert 49

.

We wake up in the morning and I shower and wear the same clothes.

Dad: we'll have breakfast in the jet.

I nod and we leave. We get to the airport and all the men are there including my brother.

I go to the jet and have breakfast while they sort out all the things they need.

By 8 we have left and I can't wait to get home. I fall asleep on our way back because the men

are on about their mission.

We arrive in East London and a driver takes me home. I am so scared of what Khwezi would say.

I buzz and after some time the gate opens. I open the door and walk inside.

I know Khwezi is home because his car is parked in the driveway.

I walk to the study and he is with Buhle. The minute I enter his face changes.

Me: hello.

Buhle: hey babe.

Khwezi: Buhle go buy us lunch. My car keys are in the kitchen.

She walks out and leaves me with Khwezi. He waits till he hears the car drive out before he gets up.

Khwezi: care to explain.

Me: I am so sorry. I wasn't thinking straight..

Khwezi: damn right you weren't thinking. Mbali you do realize that if you had died I'd have to raise our kids alone.

Me: I'm sorry.

Khwezi: mmh. I really wasn't going to bury you. I keep quiet.

Khwezi: don't ever do that again. Ever again...

He gets closer to me pushing me against the table.

Khwezi: do you understand?

I nod.

He kisses me roughly and he pulls back fast.

Before I know it he is taking off my jeans.

Pushes me on the desk and he just enters with no foreplay. He is fast and rough. His face tells me he won't stop anytime soon. I am screaming and moaning. He goes in deeper each time. I

am even apologizing. I feel an orgasm so I hold on to him and he decides to pull out. Ouch! He picks me up then helps me get dressed.

Me: Khwezi why did you do that?

He smiles then sits down and continues with his work. I laugh in disbelief then walk out.

Khwezi: Alu!

I turn to look at him.

Khwezi: in 30 minutes or so our new helper will be here.

Me: and who did you tell?

Khwezi: you weren't here so...

I nod then walk out bumping into Buhle.

Buhle: aren't you having lunch with us?

Me: I just need to take a shower.

Buhle: ok.

I walk upstairs and to the nursery first. Lwethu

is fast asleep as always. I kiss his forehead then I go take a shower. I wear my cropped jeans, black lacey top and push ins. I walk back to Lwethu then carry him downstairs.

I switch on the tv then I watch some reality shows. It's nearly 4 already. Khwezi walks in and kisses my cheek while he stands behind me.

Khwezi: I'm dropping Buhle home and fetching Enzo and the helper.

I just nod.

Khwezi: still mad at me?

I shake my head no and he chuckles.

Khwezi: I'll sort you out later.

Me: never said I needed that.

He laughs.

Khwezi: I know you do my love. I'll be back ok?

He kisses my cheek again then leaves. Buhle

didn't even come to say she's leaving but I'm not complaining.

So Khwezi comes back with both Enzo and the helper. She has so many bags. Her name is Nondumiso from Lusikisiki. Shes in her 30's so I won't mind leaving her with my kids.

Apparently her mother used to work for the Ngoma's. She looks like someone I can trust so I don't mind having her around.

.

June..

It's the beginning of June and it's a Thursday. The day we leave for the weekend away.

Apparently this happens twice a year and one of the couples host the rest at their home. So they'd be coming to our home too.

I have packed for both Khwezi and I and the only thing left is for him is to get dressed. I swear if it were up to him he'd stay naked the

whole day.

Me: Khwezi Yanga Ngoma just get dressed.

Khwezi: you packed sll my clothes.

I sigh and there is a knock on the door. It's tiny hands so I know it's Enzo. It's onky then he decides to go in the closet.

Me: come in.

She opens and jumps on the bed.

Me: and what do you want?

Enzo: just want to see you.

Me: oh. Don't you want to go to granny for the weekend?

She shakes her head no.

Me: so you'll be fine with aunty Chuma.

Enzo: yes. We have plans.

Me: tell me..

She laughs and shakes her head, I turn and

tickle her and she is laughing to a point where she can't laugh anymore. Her voice is gone.

Khwezi: Alu you are evil.

I laugh and let go of her and she runs to Khwezi.

Enzo: daddy she's trying to kill me.

Khwezi: you look so happy for someone that's dying.

She giggles.

I hear Lwethu cry through the monitor so I run to his room. He stops the minute he sees me. He starts laughing.

I walk back to my bedroom with him.

Khwezi: he's sneaky.

Me: the apple doesn't fall far from the tree.

Khwezi: he takes after his mother.

I laugh.

Khwezi takes him from me and starts talking to

him in baby language which is weird and Lwethu is laughing.

Khwezi: look after these women for me ok?

He responds and I laugh.

Khwezi: I know you will. You're just like your father, always protecting.

Lwethu laughs.

We say our goodbyes because it's nearly 11.

Me: Chuma please help Nondu look after the kids. I know you're busy with exams but please try to help when you can.

Chuma: I'll be more than willing.

I nod then hug her. Her belly is becoming visible.

We pack our things in the car then drive to Port Elizabeth. Khwezi doesn't even want me to sleep so I just watch him drive.

Me: how many couples are going to be there?

Khwezi: 5 then 6 with us. Most of the gang is

single and of course the old men who aren't joining us.

Me: how many are you?

Khwezi: a lot. Trust me.

Me: interesting. So what does one do to join.

He looks at me with his eyes squinted.

Khwezi: who wants to join?

Me: it's just a question.

Khwezi: if it's you then it's not happening.

Me: mhh.

We finally arrive at we drive to Blue Water Bay. There are 3 cars parked outside and luckily Anda's car is one of them.

Khwezi: we should also get a holiday home here.

Me: yeah the place looks really nice.

We walk out and we inside the house. Everyone is in the lounge.

Khwezi: hello everyone.

They: hey.

He handshakes the guys and hugs the girls and I just hug everyone.

I sit next to Khwezi.

Khwezi: Busi I am so hungry.

Busi is the one hosting us together with her husband. They stay in East London too. PE is just their holiday home.

Busi: you have a wife now.

Zim: how about we all go to the kitchen and start on supper.

We get up and walk to the kitchen. The 5 of us.

Zim: ok Mbali this is Busi, Babes, Thando, then me and Olwethu is on her way.

Me: nice meeting you.

Busi: weird how we all stay in East London but never meet.

Me: hopefully things are about to change.

Busi: yeah. Mbali, make something for your husband first before we start on supper.

There are left overs in the fridge so I warm that and give it to him.

He smiles then sits me on his lap.

Khwezi: I need to introduce you to the guys.

Me: oh.

Khwezi: Anda dating Zim.

The guys laugh.

Khwezi: Bongi married to Babes, Lwazi married to Busi, Tumi married to Thando. Spokes is on the way.

Me: oh nice meeting you all.

I smile then get up and walk back to the kitchen. The girls have already opened a bottle of wine.

It looks like I'll enjoy their company.

Busi: Mbali I hear you're a good cook.

Me: I try.

Zim: don't you dare lie.

I giggle.

"Ladies mantombazane!"

They laugh.

Babes: trouble.

She walks in with 2 bottles of Ciroc. It's Olwethu. She looks more beautiful than I've seen her in pictures.

Olwethu: babies. Why are you so dull nah? Miss me much? Let the weekend begin.

She takes a glass of wine and gulps it down. I am in stitches...

[05/15, 09:30] Mk: Insert 50

.

Olwethu hugs all of us and she sits on the high

chairs. Her husband Spokes walks in. He's a hottie too.

Spokes: ladies!

Us: hey.

Spokes: I just came to greet.

He hugs all of us then he leaves.

Babes: Mbali how about you cook and we help you where we can.

Me: or how about you just sit and keep me company. I'll do everything.

Olwethu: I'm going to love you.

I giggle. I decide to make chicken and mushroom pasta and steak just for something meaty.

The girls are talking and drinking. I just stick to a few shots and my wine.

Busi: hopefully tomorrow we have a bit of sun tomorrow. I need a braai.

Babes: I've been needing it for a while now.

Olwethu: I just can't wait to have your men drooling over me when I'm in my bikini.

We laugh.

Thando: some of us have been keeping in shape so I think you'll have competition.

At about 7 I'm done.

Thando: I'll set the table.

Me: thank you.

I noticed that Thando is very quiet. She doesn't have the craziness that these girls have.

I take the food to the dining room. I am starving already.

I sit in between Khwezi and Olwethu.

Busi: you guys can serve yourselves.

Olwethu: sbindi sakho girl. It's on 100.

We laugh and the guys are confused.

Olwethu stands up and serves herself and her husband and we all do the same. We have supper over light conversation then Busi and Thando wash the dishes.

Tumi: this is abuse though.

Olwethu: we all did something. I kept them company and brought the alcohol.

Babes: you need to slow down or else you won't show us flames tomorrow.

Olwethu: thanks for reminding me. I'm off.

She walks out and leaves us laughing. Olwethu brings the life to the party.

Khwezi comes to fetch me.

Khwezi: it's bed time.

Busi: it's not even midnight yet.

Khwezi: whatever.

I go to Khwezi and we walked to our bedroom and he sits me on his lap.

Khwezi: so how was it?

Me: it was great. They're actually good people.

Khwezi: I'm glad you're getting along. You look so small amongst them.

I roll my eyes. Khwezi always teases me about my height and now it happens that I'm the shortest.

Me: I am the youngest so I think it's normal.

Khwezi: no babe it's not normal, Chuma is even taller than you.

Me: it's weird how you haven't spoken about her since the whole pregnancy thing.

Khwezi: let's not talk about her.

Me: eventually we will have to talk about her.

Khwezi: just not now.

I nod and we change to our pj's and sleep immediately.

The next morning we shower together and I

wear my bra crop top, jeans and Khwezi's denim jacket.

Khwezi: and what am I supposed to wear?

Me: ha.a don't be like that.

Khwezi: you look beautiful by the way.

He kisses my forehead and we go downstairs for breakfast.

Olwethu: you are flames.

Me: thank you.

We sit down and serve ourselves.

Busi: it's a bit sunny outside so we can have oir braai in the back and swim a bit. We've warmed the pool a bit.

Olwethu: good then.

Zim: I'll make the salads.

Olwethu: Mbali and I will go buy the booze.

Khwezi literally chokes on his drink then he

looks at me.

Khwezi: and then?

He says that whispering.

Spokes: and that's how it all starts.

Khwezi: yeka.

We tidy the dining room and Babes and Zim wash the dishes. At 11 I take Khwezi's car keys and we drive to tops.

Olwethu: You must really think I'm weird.

Me: no not at all.

Olwethu: thank God. I'm a very different person to what you're probably used to. I talk a lot and I drink like crazy but I never get drunk.

Me: I noticed.

Olwethu: I've been married to Siphokuhle for 3 years now.

Me: that's a long time. I haven't even know Khwezi for that long.

Olwethu: oh yeah its still the honeymoon phase. If you have b*tch problems, call me. I know how these men can be.

I laugh. We park and there are these really hot guys next to us.

Olwethu: Jesus, remind me why I got married at such a young age.

We get out and their looking. We buy all the alcohol we'll need then we walk back to the car.

Olwethu: are all PE guys like this? Shy and gayish.

Me: your ring is cock blocker.

Olwethu: right.

We drive back home and it seems like everyone is at the back.

Me: I need help with the booze.

Spokes: kodwa uhamba no Olwethu?

They all laugh.

The guys get up and go help us.

Olwethu: let's go get dressed.

I walk to my bedroom and wear my blue bikini. I have a great body so a bikini looks good on me. I walk out and meet Olwethu in the passage and she is wearing a black one piece swimwear.

By the looks of things it's only Zim and I that are in our bikinis. I don't care either way.

We walk out and all eyes are on us.

Babes: the ladies of the hour.

I jump into the pool and it's all fun and games. We have meat. We spend the whole day in the pool. Spokes keeps giving me looks but I brush it off. It's nearly 23:00 so Khwezi and I go to bed. I have my head on his chest.

Me: I really miss the kids.

Khwezi: I miss them too but if we call they'll miss us more and they'll be trouble to Nondu.

Me: I know.

Khwezi: you looked really hot today. You always do, but today you took the cake.

Me: thanks.

Khwezi: it's my job. Don't you want to go shopping with the girls tomorrow?

Me: how about we go shopping on Sunday, just me and you.

Khwezi: great idea.

He kisses my forehead and we stay in that position for a while. I get up and go to the kitchen since I'm thirsty and a bit hungry. I pour juice for myself then rinse my glass. Someone holds me from behind and I jump. I turn and it's Spokes. He smiles.

Spokes: what are you doing at this time?

Me: I was thirsty.

Spokes: ohh?

He has me against the sink and I can't move.

Me: uhm I have to go, Khwezi is waiting for me.

Spokes: oh yeah.

He moves and I rush upstairs. I want to wake Khwezi and tell him but I don't want to cause trouble. He probably won't do it again...

[05/15, 09:30] Mk: Insert 51

.

I decide not to tell him because knowing Khwezi he'd want to beat Spokes up. And I don't want to cause drama.

I get into bed and Khwezi pulls me closer to him. I immediately tense up.

Khwezi: what's wrong.

He switches on his side lamp.

Me: nothing.

Khwezi: I know it's something. What did they do to you?

I want to tell him I really do but I don't want to ruin their friendship but on the other hand if he finds out, I will be doomed.

Me: uhm please promise you won't freak out.

He chuckles.

Khwezi: you know I can't promise you that.

Me: ok. It's one of the guys. Well he was giving strange looks since this afternoon and now he just touched me in a sexual way.

He was so calm.

Khwezi: Spokes?

I nod.

Khwezi: ok sleep.

He's a bit angry I can tell but he's trying so hard not to show. And that he wants me to sleep I know he'll probably sneak out.

Me: baby please don't do anything to him.

Khwezi: we'll see.

Me: this is why I didn't want to tell you in the first place.

Khwezi: let's leave tomorrow.

Me: and what story are we going to tell them?

Khwezi: I'll think of something.

I decide to sleep on top of him.

The next morning I wake up and Olwethu is sitting at the edge of my bed. I clear my throat and she looks at me and smiles.

Olwethu: hey.

Me: hi. Wait I just need to brush my teeth.

Olwethu: I won't be long.

I sit comfortably and face her.

Olwethu: I know what my husband did and I'm sorry. He's always been like that and it irritates me. I'm really sorry, he'll apologize too he's taking a shower.

Me: oh. Where's my husband?

Olwethu: he went out, he said he needed some air.

I nod and get up and she hugs me.

Some women can put up with nonsense, now she has to apologize for her husband's actions. No woman deserves such but some have to go through it. And to think that a woman like Olwethu could break down. She just let it all out. Seemed like she's been holding on for too long. I rubbed her back as she cried.

Me: everything will be fine I promise.

Olwethu: I don't think so Mbali. He always does this to me. I chose him over my family. My dad warned me about him but I chose to use my emotions and now I'm stuck with him forever.

Me: shh. But you guys look happy.

Olwethu: we are it's just that we always argue about women. A third person always has to be involved in our lives. What hurts the most is that

I love him too much to leave him.

Me: you don't have to leave him. You can just talk to him or attend therapy.

Olwethu: you should know that these men don't have time at all and the little time that he has, he is with a side chick.

Me: ouch.

Khwezi opens the door but I signal for him to go. She finally calms down and she goes back to her room. I take a quick shower then dry myself and wear my black jeggings and white vest with a biker jacket. I walk out and bump into Spokes who is badly bruised and I know it's Khwezi. I try to walk away but he catches up with me.

Spokes: listen Mbali I'm so sorry.

Me: it's fine.

Spokes: it's not fine. I shouldn't have done that. Especially to you since Khwezi is like a brother to me. I just got carried away. I hope things

won't be awkward between us.

Me: I hope so too.

I walk to the kitchen and have my breakfast. Everyone is jolly. We decided to keep what happened between us, we didn't want to spoil the trip for the others. Spokes said he went out and got into a fight with some guys. And luckily everyone believed him.

.

On Sunday we left. The rest of the weekend away was perfect. There was no tension or anything but Khwezi was not ok I could tell.

We arrive at home at about 5 and I am tired. It'll take the whole week to rest me.

My brothers car is parked and I know he has come to see Chuma.

Khwezi: does your brother have to do this?

Me: just let them be. At least your sister is happy and taken care of.

Khwezi: I can take care of her.

I fake a cough.

Me: from my point of view you've failed dismally. You haven't spoken to her since you found out about her pregnancy.

Khwezi: I'm trying.

Me: not hard enough.

We get out of the car and walk inside. We'll bring the bags later.

Me: hello everyone.

Enzo runs to Khwezi and he picks her up and spins her around.

Chuma: hey.

Libo: baby sis.

I hug them both.

Libo: how was the weekend?

Me: tiring but fun.

Chuma: with Olwethu, I'm sure it was fun.

We laugh.

Me: yeah she brought the fun.

Khwezi: I'll go take the bags.

He walks out and comes back with the bags.

When Libo leaves Khwezi decides we have a little meeting, well him and Chuma.

Khwezi: uhm look Chuma I know I'm not the best big brother at the moment and I'm sorry for that. I know we all make mistakes and this was one of many.

Chuma: I'm sorry too. I didn't mean for it to happen.

Khwezi: so what happens now?

Chuma: I don't know.

Me: you'll continue with school till you get your degree. Dropping out is not even an option.

Khwezi: and who will take care of the baby?

Me: me. We're family, we're supposed to look out for each other.

He looks like he doesn't like the idea one bit but I don't care. I can't let Chuma drop out because of a baby while I can help. Plus Amanda is there to help also. A baby should not be a set back for anyone.

[05/15, 09:32] Mk: Insert 52

.

So it's Monday morning and I wake up extra early because of Enzo, Chuma and Khwezi. I go take a shower and walk downstairs to make breakfast. Khwezi walks in after some time, still in his pjs.

Khwezi: you're up early.

Me: i have to make breakfast.

He comes over and kisses my cheek.

Khwezi: I'll be working from home so Buhle will be here.

I nod.

I make breakfast then go to wake Chuma up. She refuses so I stand.

Me: whats up?

Chuma: I'm not writing today.

I look at her timetable and it's true.

Me: ok.

I walk to Enzo's room and she's already up. I help bath her then we go have breakfast.

Enzo: daddy are you taking me to school?

Khwezi: yes my love.

She blushes.

Enzo: am your love?

Khwezi: you are.

She giggles and I am enjoying the sight of both them being happy. These are my people.

At 7 they leave and I call Siba. I may have new friends and this new lifestyle but I miss my best friend. Since I've been married I hardly have time for anything.

Siba: what a lovely surprise.

Me: don't make me feel bad.

Siba: I'm sorry.

Me: so tell me do you have plans for lunch?

Siba: no unless you decide to ask me out.

Me: well I am. I'll bring Buhle. She'll be working with Khwezi so yeah.

Siba: sure then.

I hang up.

I go fetch Lwethu. Nondu has already bathed him. So I take him to the lounge and we watch tv. He's babbling a lot of stuff and I am doing

the same. He is laughing and to think I almost lost him a year ago when I was drugging myself with those pills and when I fell down the stairs.

Chuma comes to join me.

Chuma: he's a beautiful baby.

Me: thank you.

Chuma: I hope I have a beautiful baby too.

Me: trust me you will. My brother is a hottie and you're beautiful too.

She blushes.

Me: you guys still together?

She nods shyly.

Chuma: I wish my brother would accept us.

Me: I can't promise you that but he'll probably loosen up after some time.

I hear laughter and its Khwezi and Buhle. The minute she enters the lounge her face immediately changes.

Khwezi comes to Lwethu and he picks him up.

Khwezi: daddys prince.

He immediately laughs. He is a happy baby.

He gives him back to me and kisses me a little longer than I expected. I pull back.

He leaves with Buhle who hasn't said a word and I think its because of Chuma.

At 12 I go change to boyfriend jeans, pink heels and a maroon wrap coat.

I walk to the study and Khwezi stares. I know that look so I just smile.

Me: uhm Buhle, I'm meeting Siba for lunch wanna come?

Buhle: uhm no thanks we're busy.

Khwezi: you can go. It's lunch after all.

Buhle: we have a lot of catching up to do.

I look at her and wonder what I did wrong but I won't let her get to me.

Me: it's fine. I'll be back before 4.

He nods.

I am about to walk out.

Khwezi: Alu.

I turn and he signals me to give him a kiss. I giggle and walk over to him and he pulls me to his lap. We kiss and after what seems like forever Buhle clears her throat.

Buhle: get a room.

We laugh and I leave because I'm already running late. I get to La Vida and my baby is already waiting for me. I'm always late.

Me: baby.

We hug for a long time and I'm emotional. I feel so bad. Siba and I have been close since forever. She's been my everything and for me to abandon her just like that was so wrong.

Siba: Mbali please don't cry.

I wipe my tears and let go.

Siba: still this emotional.

I smile.

Me: I've missed you.

Siba: I've missed you too. I've been a loner lately.
Both you and Luzukho left me.

Me: I never left you.

Siba: I know babe but we aren't close anymore.

Me: because I was busy with the wedding
planning, the honeymoon and then you know
the whole Chuma thing.

Siba: I understand.

Me: so from now on I'm never leaving your side.

Siba: good then. So what happened to Buhle?

Me: she said she's busy.

She rolled her eyes.

Siba: she has changed. We never hang out

anymore, not that I'm complaining, I mean we weren't really friends.

Me: yho. But to think of it she has. The last time she was working with Khwezi she didn't even say goodbye and today she didn't greet.

Buhle: I'm glad you see it. She has changed.

We are now eating and she offers to pay but I insist and we argue. Knowing Siba we'll argue forever so I let her be. We walk out and she takes out car keys and I scream.

Me: oh my God Siba when?

Siba: on Friday.

Me: oh my gosh and you didn't tell me.

Siba: it was supposed to be a surprise.

Me: your mom must be happy.

Siba: she is.

We have a chat and then go to our cars. I can't believe she finally bought a car.

I drive home and a car that I don't know is parked outside. I walk in and I hear noise in the kitchen so I walk in and it's Olwethu.

Olwethu: well Khwezi I don't like her.

Khwezi: I've worked with her for years.

Me: hey.

She turns and runs to hug me.

Olwethu: friend, I told you to call me when a b*tch tries to take your man from you.

Me: am I missing something ?

Olwethu: it's that PA. Yazzi Mbali I know she's your friend but I don't trust her. I know a home wrecker when I see one.

Khwezi: I would never do that to my wife.

Olwethu: I trust you but it's her that I don't trust. I don't want Mbali ending up like me. Being ratchet and running after all these skirts that Spokes drops.

I want to laugh but this is serious.

Me: where is she?

Khwezi: Olwethu threw her out.

I laugh.

Khwezi: I'm glad you're finding it funny.

Me: red or white?

Olwethu: red. And by the way you look hot.

Me: thanks.

Khwezi walks out and I pour wine for the both of us..

[05/15, 09:35] Mk: Insert 53

.

We sat in the kitchen and drank wine.

Olwethu: where were you?

Me: went to meet my best friend

Olwethu: interesting.

Me: and I was planning on taking her out for the weekend since its her birthday next week.

Olwethu: where to?

Me: Cape Town or Durban.

Olwethu: I'm coming with you.

I look at her and just laugh. Khwezi walks in with his car keys.

Khwezi: I'm fetching Enzo.

Olwethu: let's hope you're not going to fetch that witch.

He rolls his eyes and he comes over to kiss me then he walks out.

Me: so why are you here?

Olwethu: just came to see my friend.

Me: oh wow.

We spend some time together then she leaves when Khwezi returns with Enzo. I start cooking supper because it's late.

Khwezi walks in with Lwethu and I kiss his cheek and as always he giggles.

Khwezi: your mom called.

Me: oh?

Khwezi: she says you haven't called in a while.

Me: I've been busy. We last spoke on Thursday.

Khwezi: and today is Monday.

Me: I'll call.

Khwezi: I was thinking, how about we get your mom a house here in East London and she can work here. I'd love for my kids to know their grandmother or at least have her present in our kids' lives.

Me: I don't know if she'll like that.

Khwezi: too late. She said she'd think about it.

I stare at him and he looks me straight in the eye like he did nothing wrong.

Me: again, you do as you please.

Khwezi: it's not true. I thought of the idea when I spoke to her.

Me: mhh. I was thinking of going away during the weekend. For Siba' s birthday.

Khwezi: where to?

Me: I haven't decided yet.

Khwezi: mh. Just tell me when you have. I need to sort out stuff for you.

Me: thanks.

I call Siba and she is so excited she wants to go on the coming weekend. Khwezi obviously has to make it happen. We decide on Cape Town.

I finish cooking and dish up for the family.

Nondu goes to eat at the cottage. I wash the dishes with Chuma and after I go to bed.

Lwethu and Enzo are still in our bedroom.

Me: you didn't tell me we have visitors.

Enzo: we are about to leave.

Me: it's way past their bed time.

Khwezi: I know

I kiss both my babies then I go shower. By the time I'm done Khwezi walks in. We get into bed and I figure, now is the time.

Me: so on Friday night we're flying to Cape Town.

Khwezi: ok. You'll be staying at Durbanville.

Me: ha.a . We need space, why do you want to keep me under your watch?

Khwezi: because I care.

I nod.

Khwezi: Listen Alu. I'm only letting you go because you've so busy with this marriage that you forgot about your friend. We have kids and Luthando is only 8 months, he needs special attention from both his parents and you can't keep traveling.

I keep quiet, what he's saying is true. I have kids and I'm married. I can't be wondering around with friends all the time..

.

So it's Friday night and we just landed in Cape Town. Khwezi gave me strict instructions for the trip. But this is my last time so I have enjoy.

There's a car already waiting for us so we get the car and drive to Durbanville. Aphiwe is probably waiting for us already.

Olwethu: tomorrow we are going to get drunk.

Me: not too drunk.

Siba: it's my birthday so allow me.

We arrive and hoot.

Siba: is this Aphiwe's house?

Me: yes. Her dad bought it for her.

Siba: yho.

The gate opens and we drive in. I park behind

her and she walks to the car.

Aphiwe: my baby sis.

I smile.

Aphiwe: how are you guys?

Olwethu: we're good just tired.

We take our bags then settle in the guest rooms.

We've already had supper so we just go to bed. I send Khwezi a message then switch my phone off. I know he'll give me a whole lecture on staying safe even though he knows my location.

The next morning I take a shower. Its quiet chilly so I wear my navy jumpsuit with faded jeans and heels. I walk downstairs and as always I'm late. We have breakfast then sit and chat.

Siba: I want to go out.

Me: yeah we will.

Aphiwe comes down and we hit the road. Using

the car I got. Olwethu is at the front as always and I'm driving.

Aphiwe: let's go site seeing first.

Siba: I don't care about Cape Town. I just want the good life.

Olwethu: I second you.

So we go to Long street. The spot that everyone that everyone wants to go to when they are in CPT. We have a few shots then ciders. At 12 we go to Waterfront for lunch. I am seriously hungry so I don't order something light as I always do when we go drinking.

Siba: are you sure you're going to finish all that?

Me: I am.

Aphiwe: it's so unlike you.

Me: I had little breakfast.

They all look at me weirdly.

Olwethu: I agree. The breakfast was just too

little.

Me: thank you.

We eat then pay the bill and decide on doing shopping as well since we're here. We have so much wine on the way back home I am even feeling light headed. I pull aside and Siba drives. Aphiwe opens the window and my head is super hot.

Aphiwe: just breathe ok?

I nod and we get home and I immediately go lie down.

I wake up at 6 and I have missed calls from Khwezi so I call back.

Me: hey.

Buhle: oh he's not here.

I look at the time and its after 6. What the hell is Buhle doing qith my husband at this time.

Me: where is he?

Buhle: tucking in Luthandolwethu.

Me: at this time?

Buhle: yes at this time.

Me: ohh.

I hang up and run downstairs the girls are still busy with booze.

Me: so this girl is really busy with my man.

Olwethu turns immediately.

Aphiwe: who?

Me: Buhle. She just answered his phone.

Khwezi never works on Saturdays. And to make matters worse it's after 6.

Olwethu: the minute we land in East London, I will sort that girl out. I sensed this the first day I saw her playing madam in your kitchen.

Siba: but we can't be sure though. Talk to Khwezi before you assume the worst.

Me: as if he'd admit.

Aphiwe: my brother would never stoop that low.
I know him too well.

I decide to keep quiet. My phone rings and its
Khwezi.

Me: what?

Khwezi: ouch. Uhm babe I wanted to tell you
that I'm flying to Johannesburg tonight. I have a
case Monday morning.

Me: and what will happen to the kids?

Khwezi: that's why we have a helper. But I've
already put hem to bed so they don't see me
when I leave. You know how Lwethu can be.

Me: oh.

Khwezi: so I guess I'll see you Monday
afternoon.

Me: is Buhle coming with?

Khwezi: she is my PA so she has to.

Me: oh.

Khwezi: babe please trust me. I would never do that to you. I promise ok? Plus I've worked with Buhle for years and I don't see her in that way.

Me: ok uhm good luck on your case.

Khwezi: thanks my love. I love you okay?

Me: ok

Khwezi: you don't want me being angry now?

I giggle.

Me: I love you too.

We hang up and they all look at me.

Olwethu: khona who does she think she is. You have sleepless nights, build Khwezi and to top it off you gave him a heir and she thinks she can just jump on his dick and play madam. Does she know what we go through with these men.

We are in stitches. Olwethu is angrier than I am.

Aphiwe: she wants it ready just for her.

Olwethu: as if Khwezi would leave you for her

with that small ass of hers. I just hope you give him good sex.

I laugh.

Aphiwe: she made him shoot doubles soo...

Me: no man lets leave that. Please pour me wine.

Aphiwe: no, no wine for you. You weren't feeling well a few hours ago.

Me: oh yeah.

We carry on chatting and I am enjoying myself....

[05/15, 09:35] Mk: Insert 54(crop top)

.

Khwezi

I wake up and my head is pounding. I'm in the office which is weird. I never sleep at work.

Me: what the hell happened?

I hardly remember the days events. I check

thetime and it's already after 4. I remember waiting for my wife to bring me lunch and that's it.

I pack my stuff and lock up then I drive to fetch Enzo. I'm still a bit drowsy. She looks like she's been crying. I'm later than usual.

Me: I'm so sorry my love. I promise to make it up to you.

Enzo: how?

Me: with whatever you want.

She smiles and I let out a sigh. We drive home and my wife's car is in the driveway so I park behind her. I walk in with Enzo in my arms and the minute we enter she runs off to Chuma.

They are very close which is a good thing. Enzo is a darling like her mother, close with everyone.

I walk upstairs and she's lying on the bed playing with her phone. She looks blank with red eyes.

Me: hey babe what's wrong?

Tears just fall and I am hurt. I hate it when she cries.

I sit on the bed and try to hold her but she pushes me away.

Me: what happened?

She throws her phone to me and there's a picture of Buhle and I in bed. This is weird because I don't remember any of this plus I would never have an affair with Buhle.

Me: what is this?

Mbali: stop acting dumb Khwezi.

Me: I don't know what you're talking about.

Mbali: you also don't know that you had sex with her in your office today?

Me: Mbali what are you talking about? I have no idea.

She keeps quiet and thinks.

Mbali: Khwezi you hurt me. But this is the worst you have ever done. How could you?

Me: Mbali listen to me. I have no clue what you're talking about. I know nothing about the pictures too.

Mbali: you can deny it all you want. I have proof.

She walks out and I decide to call Sfiso my IT guy. This can't be. I can't be forgetting something that happened a few hours ago. I ask for the my offices footage. He promises to send it before 7...

Mbali

I want to believe Khwezi because he looks so confused. But how would he explain the pictures and what I walked in on.

I go to the kitchen and start defrosting the meat. I want to call Olwethu but no, I want to solve my house affairs alone.

After I finish cooking I serve them then I go take

shower.

Khwezi walks in looking tired but I don't care.

Khwezi: Alu please trust me.

Me: I saw it with my own two eyes..

Khwezi: I saw it too but it's not true.

I get into bed without talking to him. I am hurt, funny how I'm not even angry.

I wake up in the morning and Khwezi is not next to me. I check the time and its past 8.

I take a shower then wear my pjs and stay in bed. I suddenly fall asleep again. I cried myself to sleep once again.

I fell hands touching me so I jump up and its Khwezi. He makes me watch a footage of his office. I saw everything I don't even know why I'm watching this but I decide to watch it anyway.

Me: so what does this change?

He takes out papers and it's a drug test.

I look at him and he looks at me.

Me: what's this?

Khwezi: drug test. She drugged me.

I pause and think. Then I laugh in disbelief.
Buhle had the nerve. After everything I've done
for her. The times I spent with her. Making her
feel like family when she had no one...

Me: she drugged you?

He nods and I chuckle.

She doesn't know who she's messing with.
Gone is the Mbali that will pity her. And she will
now meet the Mbali that Olwethu created. I get
dressed and leave..

[05/15, 09:38] Mk: Her heart- My story

Insert 55

.

I drive to Amalinda and to where she stays. The

minute I get there I suddenly feel she is not worth it but I enter anyway. Without even knocking. She is wearing a wrap around cloth. She is shocked to see me.

Buhle: what are you doing here?

Me: I have every right to be here. We're friends aren't we?

Buhle: please leave.

Me: Buhle how could you do this to me after everything I've done for you.

Buhle: if you don't leave I'll scream.

I laugh because it's a Wednesday morning and everyone is at work so what could she be screaming for.

I get closer to her and the anger builds up. I slap her hard and blood comes out of her nose. I throw her on the couch and start punching her. She is screaming and kicking but I don't stop.

I feel hands pull me up and it's Khwezi. I just cry,

I always cry when I'm angry.

Khwezi: babe she's not worth it ok?

He holds me and we walk to my car.

Me: where's your car?

Khwezi: I took a cab.

I nod and we drive back home. The minute we get home he carries me to bed. He comes back with a sandwich, glass of water and pills.

I eat the sandwich, I didn't even realize I was hungry. I take the pills and I immediately doze off. I wake up at 2 and I go to the lounge Khwezi is there with Lwethu. I smile when I see them. I just suddenly miss my dad and he's only coming back in September.

Me: hey family.

Khwezi: you're awake. How are you feeling?

Me: well rested.

He smiles then kisses me. And to think I almost

lost my husband scares me.

There's a knock and I'm guessing Nondu opened the gate to them. I go open and it's two police men and Buhle. She looks terrible.

Me: how can I help you?

Police 1: you are under arrest for assault.

I laugh a little then it all comes back to me, this is serious.

Khwezi comes to the door and he can't believe it too.

Khwezi: whats happening here?

Police 2: Mrs Ngoma is being arrested for assault.

Now they are serious they hand cuff me and read out my rights.

Khwezi: I'll be there just now ok?

I nod. And I'm thrown in the van...

Khwezi.

I leave Lwethu with Nondu and I rush to Fleet street police station. I get there before them and I call Bulumko a friend of mine. He's one of the detectives here. He comes outside and he smiles when he sees me.

Me: it's been a while.

Bulumko: it has been. Whats the problem?

Me: my wife has been arrested for assault. They are probably on the way with her.

Bulumko: and what did she do?

Me: she beat up my PA.

I tell him the whole story and he is in stitches. The van pulls up and they take her out.

Bulumko: hey. Let her go.

Police 1: but...

Bulumko: I am your boss so do as I say.

They let her go and she runs to me and I hold her real tight.

Me: thanks man.

Bulumko: don't mention it.

Me: I'll sort you out okay?

He nods and walks inside and we go to the car.

Me: Don't ever do that again, let me sort it out.

Mbali: okay.

I kiss her cheek and we go fetch Enzo...

.

It's now October and Khwezi and I have been good together. Not too much drama just a few figts here and there. My mom moved to East London, all thanks to Khwezi. He got her a house in Vincent and she's working here. My dad is back and I've never been happier. I was the first person he saw when he got back. I really missed him. Khwezi has been giving me lessons on self defense and its been hard, trust me. He fired Buhle and apparently she left East London.

So its on a Friday and I'm going out with my girls for lunch. So I wear my black lingerie top, jeans and my red heels and i look amazing. I bath Lwethu and he wears his jeans, long sleeved vest and a bomber jacket with red levis takkies.

He looks the part. He already started walking and he's only 11 months and a premature.

I take a picture of us and send it to Khwezi and he calls immediately.

Me: baby.

Khwezi: you look so incomplete.

Me: I think we're complete.

Khwezi: so how are you spending the day?

Me: getting my hair and nails done, lunch with the girls then I go visit my parents and probably come by to see you.

Khwezi: thats a very long day.

Me: I know.

Khwezi: enjoy then. I love you.

Me: I love you too.

I hang up and we have breakfast then leave. I go to get my hair done in Vincent. A get a 20 inch Peruvian weave and nude stiletto nails. By 12 we're done and we drive to Grazia. My baby is in the front seat and we're jamming to his dad's playlist.

We arrive and walk in. As always I'm late.

Olwethu: Ben 10 wam. Come to aunty.

He smiles and walks to her. I hug all my girls, Siba, Olwethu, and Zim.

Zim: you look amazing.

Me: thank you.

I call a waiter and we order.

Olwethu: I'd like to have you.

She is referring to the waiter. Shame poor guy

can't even concentrate anymore.

Me: Olwethu!

She laughs and orders.

Siba: so what are we doing for Lwethu's 1st birthday?

Me: I haven't even thought of something.

Olwethu: leave it to us. But obviously Khwezi has to pay.

Me: obviously.

Siba: has Buhle tried calling you.

Me: no she would never.

Zim: I still think you should have killed her.

Me: no I don't want blood on my hands.

Olwethu: you're too nice.

Siba: same thing I told her.

Me: I didn't have that in me back then. But if I were to see her now we'd be talking a different

story.

Our order arrives and we dig in.

Lwethu comes to me and I know he's tired. He puts his head on my boobs. He always does that when he's sleepy.

Olwethu: marking daddy's territory.

We laugh.

Me: and daddy doesn't even like him doing this.

Zim: he can be so jealous at times.

We finish up and Olwethu and I pay the bill since this was our idea.

We leave and I buckle Lwethu in his seat but wakes up and he comes to the front.

My phone rings and it's Khwezi.

Me: baby daddy.

He chuckles.

Khwezi: please come to my office. As in now.

Me: whats up?

Khwezi: just get here.

He hangs up and I drive to his office which is not that far. I tame Lwethu and when we get to reception he runs to his dads office. I just decide to follow. I get in and he's in his dads arms.

Me: hey.

Khwezi: he even knows my office.

Me: I know. He was sleepy until we got here.

Khwezi smiles.

Me: why am I here.

He gives me an envelope and it is s court order.

I read through it and laugh in disbelief. So Siya is taking me to court.

Me: when did this get here?

Khwezi: this afternoon.

So this whole issue started when Siya threatened to run away with Enzo and from then I told him to see Enzo at our home. And if they ever went out, there was a guard following them. I couldn't risk losing my daughter and a few weeks ago he threatened to take me to court but I didn't think he was serious.

Me: what if he wins and take her away from me?

Khwezi: never. Have I ever lost a case?

I shake my head.

Khwezi: I won't lose this one too. Especially since my daughter is involved. I'll fight with everything I have. Don't even worry about it.

I nod and he hugs me...

[05/15, 09:39] Mk: Insert 56

.

I am suddenly not even worried about this whole Siya thing. I know Khwezi will make a plan. So we leave his office and I go fetch Enzo

from school. We get home at 3 and I want to take a nap but Lwethu won't let me. He's been calling me the whole day.

My phone rings and it's my father in law.

Me: Ta Badz.

K'dad: I see Khwezi's attitude is rubbing on you.

Me: I just love the name.

K' dad: so you say. So uhm I wanted to invite you guys for supper.

Me: the whole family?

K'dad: yes. Even Aphiwe is flying in.

Me: oh wow. What's the occasion?

K'dad: just bring yourselves okay?

Me: okay then. See you tonight.

K'dad: ok then.

I hang up and try to get hold of Khwezi but his phone is off which is strange. I have a lot of

stuff going on in my head but I won't entertain it...

Khwezi.

I have literally had it with Siya's attitude towards everything. I am at the point where I just want to kill him and bury him with no one knowing.

I drive to his workplace, and lucky for me he is available. I walk in and make myself comfortable. After all this is a formal meeting.

Siya: and what do I owe the visit?

Me: aren't you going to offer me coffee or water?

Siya: just get to the point.

I like people like him. He doesn't have time for games and well so do I.

Me: right. Uhm listen Siya I have two options for you.

He smiles.

Siya: I won't fall for any of your negotiations.

You can speak to my lawyer.

Me: this is a battle between us.

He is attentive which I love. I love it when someone listens to me.

Me: option 1 is I kill you. Or you can take the easy way out which is option 2, you leave the city, move on with your life, don't bother me and my wife ever again. Enzo doesn't need a bitter father that will only show up when it suits him.

Siya: I am a busy man.

Me: I'm busy too, but I always spend time with my family. Always. Now back to business, I want you to choose.

Siya: you don't scare me.

Me: interesting.

I already have people take his wife to some warehouse. I asked them to rough her up a bit. I mean she was giving my wife a hard time so I guess this is pay back.

I video call Sfiso.

Me: how much damage have you done?

Sfiso: we're getting to the fun part.

I look at Siya and he is confused.

Me: hand the phone to her so she can say her last goodbyes to the man who couldn't save her.

I give him the phone and he is angry.

Me: now choose because the time is ticking.

I take my phone and walk away. I decide to turn back.

Me: oh and with whatever decision you make just know Enzo is a Ngoma.

I wave then walk out and to my car then I drive home.

Mbali..

I am in the kitchen making late lunch for the kids. Khwezi walks in whistling and he's early.

Me: someone is in a good mood.

Khwezi: our problems are slowly disappearing.

Me: meaning?

Khwezi: just that.

He kisses my cheek and I'm left confused.

Me: by the way we have dinner at your dad's place tonight. Aphiwe is also flying in.

Khwezi: what's the occasion?

Me: no clue.

Khwezi: weird.

He walks out and I go feed Lwethu and Enzo. It's nearly late so I need to take a shower before we leave. Khwezi is in the study working so I walk over and sit on his lap.

Me: we need to take a shower.

Khwezi: I know babe just finalising some stuff for the club.

Me: we can do that later.

I get up and we walk to the bedroom together. I've chosen both our outfits already and they are laid on the bed. We get in the shower and get ourselves clean after the long day.

As I exit he pulls me back in, kissing my neck. It sends shivers down my spine immediately and I moan. He bends me over then enters me without warning. He is slow at first but later increases the pace. Too fast and hard. He switches off the cold water and it's steaming hot.

I feel about to let out his juices and I let it out before he does.

He pulls out then we both get dressed. The kids are also already dressed and we leave. We get there at around 7 and Aphiwe is already there. She hugs all of us then we sit around the table.

Aphiwe: pregnancy suits you by the way.

Chuma: I'll pretend I didn't hear that.

The helper sets the table with the help of Nondu then Mr Ngomaa enters with this beautiful woman. The look on Khwezi's face makes me want to laugh but I hold it in.

He wants to say something but I hold his hand and squeeze it.

K'dad: good evening kids. Uhm I called you here for a very important announcement.

That is Khwezi's dad for you. He goes straight to the point.

K'dad: this is Claudia Kunene well soon to be Ngoma. We're getting married at the end of this month.

The siblings look at each other and Aphiwe laughs.

Aphiwe: I'm sorry but that won't happen.

K'dad: so since this is happening I decided to leave the legal business world and focus on the

illegal. So finally son the law firm is yours. I'll be handing it over to you officially tomorrow. We just have to sign a few documents.

Bandile(Khwezi's dad) is my role model. He doesn't even mind the kids comments he just carries on like nothing is wrong. I want to laugh so bad but this is serious.

K'dad: the rest will just be family businesses, all of you can be a helping hand. If you fail then that's your inheritance gone.

Khwezi: so what we say is not important?

K'dad: all of you left me here alone. So you expect me to stay single till I die? I have needs to unless you're willing to share your wife.

Me: uhm the food is getting cold.

Chuma: yes.

They serve themselves and I serve my husband and kids. It's dead silence around the table. Just the sound of the utensils.

We are done and ready to leave.

K' dad: just so you know, nothing you say will change my mind. Goodnight kids. Makoti iza.

I follow him to the kitchen. He lets out a sigh and I know that he is defeated. Bandile is a family man, he would never do anything that his kids are against and I'm sure he was just putting up a brave front.

K'dad: I don't know anymore. It gets lonely here. I miss her all the time and I want to move on but I'm sure they won't accept anyone.

I suddenly feel guilty.

Me: but are you really getting married?

K'dad: no. I just wanted to see their reaction. But I am seeing Claudia.

Me: just give them time.

K'dad: I was hoping you'd speak to Khwezi. Aphiwe listens to him.

Me: I'll try.

We walk out together and I head to the car.
Khwezi is on another level of being happy.

Me: and then?

He hands me his phone and its a message from Siya.

"You won, I'll leave before the end of the week.
And I'll never come back ."

I just look at it and give it back to him. I can't comment while his sisters are here.

We get home and he walks to the bedroom first.
I take the kids to bed and go to my bedroom.
Khwezi is in bed already and I chanhe to my pjs.

Me: and what did you do to Siya?

Khwezi: I asked him to leave.

Me: wow. Why are you so controlling?

Khwezi: I am doing what is best for Enzo.

Me: Enzo will ask about her dad. She knows

who her real dad is.

Khwezi: uhm Siya hasn't seen her in 2 weeks and I don't remember her asking about him. And I am a father to Enzo as much as Siya is, I'm even way better at fathering her.

Me: what happens when she asks about him?

Khwezi: we'll tell her he's gone.

Me: wow.

Khwezi: I can call Siya and ask him to come back and he'll keep torturing you.

Me: that's not what I said.

Khwezi: what do you want then?

I sigh and just turn to face the other side. He moves closer to me and cuddles me. He pulls me on top of him and he smiles.

Khwezi: stop being dramatic.

I decide to keep quiet and let what flows flow...

[05/15, 09:40] Mk: Insert 57

.

Khwezi.

Let me formally re introduce myself. I'm Khwezi Yanga Ngoma. A lawyer and business man. I only studied law because I was forced to by my dad since they needed someone to defend them and as time went by I fell in love. And that's when I met Zintle. I loved her dearly, she was my first real love and I made a vow to marry her. We obviously had a few up and downs and I was still young back then so I fooled around a lot. And Zintle decided to do the same and that's what basically led to our break up-her falling pregnant.

After I lost her I just focused on my business and the illegal family business. That's the only thing that mattered, oh and the girls too. I've never had a problem getting any girl I've wanted. So when Mbali came around I had an agenda already, hit it and run. But when I got to know

her better and people being against us, that all changed. She actually changed me into being a better man. And that's when I realised that I want to settle down with her and no one else. We've had our problems, especially the fact that she was involved in my mom's death even though it wasn't direct, the whole housewife thing, issues with Siya and Buhle. We managed to pull through and that's exactly why I never want to give up on her.

.

It's 7 in the morning and we are still in bed. I'm thinking of taking my wife out for her birthday. But I haven't really thought it through.

She still pouts when she sleeps which is really cute. I wake up and walk downstairs. My sisters are already in the lounge.

Me: sisters!

Aphiwe: brother.

Chuma: hey.

Nondu is already making breakfast.

Me: I need your help again.

Aphiwe: birthday plans?

I nod.

Chuma: how about Durban for the weekend.

Me: the gift?

Aphiwe: there's still 2 weeks. You can think of something.

She walks in, still in her pjs.

Aphiwe: the Alu's!

She smiles. God really took his time creating my wife. She's the best thing that could happen to a man.

Mbali: good morning everyone.

Chuma: morning.

Mbali: is breakfast ready, I'm starving.

Aphiwe: it'll be ready soon.

Mbali: mhh.

She comes and sits in top of my lap facing me.

Mbali: and then you decide to leave me.

Me: you looked peaceful and remember what happened the last time I woke you up?

She laughs and covers her face with her hands.

Mbali: I was pregnant then.

Me: I don't want to take chances.

She kisses me and I'm shocked. Mbali would never do that especially in front of people. She's even grinding.

Aphiwe: hayi hayi get a room.

She pulls away then looks at me.

Mbali: I love you.

Ok now this is weird.

Me: I love you too.

Breakfast is ready so we go have breakfast. We take a shower together and she is on her knees before I even know it, sucking for dear life. What is wrong with Mbali?

We get dressed.

Mbali: I'm going to visit my mom for the rest of the day. I'm taking the kids with.

Me: ok. I'll go chill with the guys.

At 12 I leave and go to Anda's place. The guys are all there which is a good thing because I missed them.

Me: bo baby.

Anda: just look at how refreshed he is. He's been getting it all, everyday.

I just laugh.

Libo: and I know how wild my sister can be.

Me: I haven't been getting anything.

Tumi: so you're starving?

I laugh as I think of this morning.

Me: I'd never starve.

Anda: That's how a married man speaks.

We laugh.

We are drinking and talking about everything then I receive a message from a random number. "We're pregnant" and there's a picture of a scan also. There's only one person I can think of and it's Buhle. I'm freaked out.

This is going to kill Mbali.

Anda: are you okay?

As I'm about to show him my phone rings and it's my wife.

Me: baby.

Mbali: I miss you already and it's not even funny. Please come home.

I chuckle.

Me: I'm on my way.

She hangs up and I show Anda the message and he's shocked too...

[05/15, 09:42] Mk: Insert 58

.

Khwezi.

I have mixed emotions. I so badly don't want Mbalo hurt again, I can't keep hurting her like this but then again that could be my baby.

I call the number and just as I guessed it's Buhle.

Buhle: so you saw the message?

Me: of course. What the hell do you want from me?

Buhle: I was just letting you know about your baby.

Me: for someone who's worked with me for years you're really stupid.

Buhle: there is no crime in what I did.

I park outside my house.

Me: Buhle I'll call you when I have time.

I hang up and get inside. Lwethu is already at the door. He always waits for me. I pick him up and spin him around. And he laughs.

I walk to my bedroom and Alu is in bed. I want to tell her everything before Buhle tells her.

I lock the door and sit next her.

Me: so how was your day?

Mbali: perfect yours?

Me: good my love. And why are you in bed?

She takes out her phone and shows me the scan and message from Buhle. I swallow really hard...

Mbali...

I have no idea what I did to deserve all this. It has been scandal after scandal nothing ever works out my way or at least the perfect way. I

know marriage isn't supposed to be perfect but this is too much.

Me: so what now?

Khwezi: I don't know my love.

It is now quiet. I let out a sigh and just look at him.

This is probably the first time that there is no solution.

Khwezi: I'll do anything that will make you happy. I don't want anything to hurt you.

Me: I don't know Khwezi. After all it could be your baby.

He lets out a sigh and rubs his head.

Khwezi: I could help her raise the baby but you know she will be like all baby mamas. Always on our case. I mean I don't want anything that will link me to her.

Me: so what do you suggest?

Khwezi: I'll figure something out. I promise.

I am suddenly quiet, I don't even have energy anymore.

.

So as awkward as things were we tried to keep our home at peace. A week later Khwezi told me we won't have to worry about Buhle anymore. I don't know what he did and he wouldn't tell me so I let him be. My birthday came at the wrong time. We had plans but after this whole Buhle saga I was not even in the mood so Khwezi just cancelled everything and we spent my birthday together as a family.

Chuma was done done with her final exams and she was so happy because the waking up thing was tiring. I was surprised my brother was still with her and for once I saw my brother was serious about someone.

So my ladies pulled through and helped me plan my baby's birthday.

So it's the Saturday and I'm on my tows finalising everything in the backyard. Khwezi is helping and the catering ladies are already here.

Khwezi: you should go take a bath. The people will be here in 30 minutes.

Me: you too.

We walk upstairs and take a bath together. We both decide on black and white. So black jeans and white t shirts. I am wearing nude stilettos and he wears sneakers. The kids are already dressed running around in the play room.

Me: Lwethu!

He looks at me then giggles.

"Family!!" That could only be Olwethu. I walk downstairs with Lwethu and Khwezi follows with Enzo.

Olwethu: look at you.

Shes with her daughter who is a bit younger than Enzo- Singalakha.

Khwezi: my man! Singa!

She smiles, she's a cutie.

Olwethu: how is everything going?

Me: well.

The door swings open and Amanda and my dad walk in. Before we know it the backyard is full. All my friends are here, Khwezi's friends and both our families.

The kids are enjoying themselves, getting face paints and playing games. I'm with my girls.

Siba: this is a success.

Me: I know.

Thando: you must be tired.

Me: very. We woke up at 6 just to get everything done.

Zim: that's not early.

Me: for someone who slept at 2 it is.

Olwethu: oooh I get you.

We laugh and carry in chatting. I check on everyone before we have our lunch. They exchange gifts and the day goes on. At 5 people start leaving and we are all tired but we have a late night adult party.

Anda: hostess yethu. Can we get more drinks.

I get up and walk to the kitchen only to find my mom and dad in each others arms, giggling like live struck teenagers. I clear my throat and they pull away from each other.

Dad: oh Mbali we were leaving.

Me: oh ok.

Mom: I'll go kiss my grandkids and leave since you're having your party.

Me: ok

She walks away and it's just me and my dad.

Me: by the way, you have lipstick on your shirt.

He looks embarrassed but I don't care.

Me: so how long has this been happening?

Dad: what?

Me: you know what I mean?

Dad: nothing is happening between me and your mother.

Amanda walks in.

Amanda: you've been busy. Thank you, we enjoyed ourselves and our grandchildren also had a good time.

We hug and they leave my mom follows afterwards. I go back to the back and it's starting to get dark. Everyone is dancing and drinking. I'm just sipping on my water. I don't feel like alcohol.

Siba: the last time you did this you were pregnant.

Me: I'm still on the pill so worry not.

Olwethu: you better not be.

Aphiwe: I know how my brother is.

Me: you guys, I'm not pregnant.

We have chats while they drink then I later decide to go to bed. I am super tired.

Khwezi walks in.

Khwezi: so early?

Me: yes. I'm tired and people should leave soon.

Khwezi: ok then.

He looks at me and honestly I think there's something he wants to tell me.

Me: what now?

Khwezi: nothing. So tell me when are we trying again?

Me: Lwethu just turned one.

Khwezi: I know but we need to have a family.

Me: we are a family.

He's quiet.

Me: so you plan on keeping this Buhle thing a secret?

Khwezi: I don't want you getting involved.

Me: what really happened?

Khwezi: I'll be with the guys.

He walks out and I'm defeated so I sleep...

[05/15, 09:43] Mk: Insert 59

.

I wake up on the Sunday morning and I'm really tired. I doubt I'll be able to go to church.

Lwethu is running in our bedroom. This kid has so much energy. I pick him up and he gets in bed and wakes his dad up.

Lwethu: tata! Tata!

Khwezi was a bit drunk last night so he probably has a hangover.

He wakes up and kisses him and he giggles.

Khwezi: good morning.

He attempts to kiss me but I move away.

Khwezi: ha.a ke.

He pulls me then kisses me.

Me: so did everyone leave?

Khwezi: yeah, just Aphiwe.

Me: ok. I'll go make breakfast then.

I walk out and go brush my teeth and wash my face. I walk downstairs and make breakfast.

Khwezi's phone is in the lounge. And I'm thinking of going through it since he's been so secretive about this whole Buhle thing. I know the password so I go through his messages, calls, whatsapp and there's nothing useful.

"Have you seen my phone?"

I slip it in my pocket and turn to face him.

Me: no.

Khwezi: I need to call the cleaning services.

Me: ohh I'll help you look for it.

I walk back to the kitchen and finish up. I take the food to the dining room and go back to Khwezi who is in the lounge.

Me: here. I found it on the kitchen.

He smiles and I'm relieved.

I walk upstairs and wake everyone up. We have our breakfast over light conversation. After breakfast I go take long shower. Wear my black short jumpsuiy with flip flops. November is really hot.

Khwezi: I'm going to the warehouse.

Me: you're spending a lot of time at the warehouse lately.

He looks at me then fixes his shirt.

Khwezi: I need the money.

Me: Khwezi I know you're lying to me and this

won't end well.

Khwezi: why would I lie?

Me: I don't know okay? And if I ever find what you're hiding from me, hell will break loose.

Khwezi: is this about Buhle? Fine then, I'm keeping her at one of our secret locations till she gives birth.

I let out a sigh. I didn't want her to be dead but I still would have appreciated honesty. And then he still asks me to get off the pill but he's waiting for the birth of his baby. I know the baby is innocent but I don't think I can raise someone else's child. I know you'll say I'm being unfair and hypocritical but I can't live with what Buhle did. Just the thought of it hurts me to the core.

Me: then why did you have to hide that?

Khwezi: your reaction tells me I shouldn't have even told you. Alu I know how this hurts you but she could be carrying my child.

Me: of course.

I walk to the door and he pulls me.

Me: just leave me alone.

Khwezi: we have to talk.

I just look at him and say nothing. I am angry. He obviously met with Buhle after I asked him not to.

Khwezi: Mbali loom at me.

I pull my hand from him and leave the bedroom. I walk to the lounge where everyone is.

Aphiwe: makoti wase khaya.

I just smile and sit next to her. Now I can't even tell anyone about this Buhle thing because I only told Siba, Olwethu and Zim. And Khwezi only told Anda.

Aphiwe: and what did he do this time?

Me: nothing.

He walks in with his car keys.

Khwezi: I'll be back before lunch.

He walks out and doesn't even wait for a response.

Aphiwe: is this why?

Me: sort of.

Aphiwe: I'll talk to him.

Me: don't.

After this whole saga I am seriously not in the mood. The next day is my daughters graduation, she'll be going to Grade R the next year. At least I should focus on that.

It's lunch time and Khwezi is not here so I don't bother to call him because I know we'll argue. We have lunch without him.

Aphiwe: should I ask the driver to take me to the airport?

Me: I'll take you.

She tries to call Khwezi but he doesn't respond.

So we leave for the airport.

Aphiwe: whatever is happening between the two of you should be sorted soon.

Me: that's if your brother wants that to happen.

Aphiwe: I'm sure Khwezi doesn't like arguing with you.

Me: he does it a lot for someone who doesn't enjoy it.

Aphiwe: I know you'll pull through.

I nod and she hugs me. She checks in and I leave her, driving back home. I get home and Khwezi is still not home. It's just after 5.

I ask Nondu to cook because I'm exhausted.

Enzo: mama is my other dad coming tomorrow?

Me: no babe he's busy but I'll send him pictures.

She seems disappointed.

Me: you'll visit him during the holidays if that'll make you feel better.

Enzo: I think he doesn't love me anymore.

Me: he still loves you. But he stays far so he can't always see you.

She nods. This is going to be hard. I've already ironed and hung my outfit for the next day.

Chuma: where's my brother?

Me: I wouldn't know.

Chuma: what is going on between you two?

Me: nothing. He's not answering his phone so he might be busy.

The table is set and we're ready to eat when Khwezi walks in.

Khwezi: I'm sorry I'm late.

He sits down and serves himself.

Chuma: we've been trying to call you.

Khwezi: I was busy. Where's Aphiwe?

Chuma: she went back to Cape Town.

Khwezi: why wasn't I told?

Me: you weren't here.

I feel his eyes on me but I don't look at him.

After supper I go straight to bed and Khwezi's diary is on the bed. I pick it up and something falls and it's a scan. I laugh in disbelief but I tell myself I won't ask him anything. I place on his side of the bed then get into bed. He walks in shortly afterwards.

Khwezi: I have bad news.

I don't respond.

Khwezi: I'll be leaving tomorrow afternoon. One of the missions. I'll be back in 2 months time.

I don't respond again. At this point I don't care and I don't even believe the story.

Khwezi: Alu?

I pull the blanket and cover myself he comes to pull it away and I just stare at him.

Me: Khwezi what do you want from me? I obey all your orders, I submit to you, I do all my wife duties and on top of that I do everything to please you. So tell me, what is it that you want now?

He moves away slowly and he looks surprised. I pull the blanket and cover myself again while shedding a few tears. I am tired emotionally. There is no rest in this marriage. There are secrets and scandals all the time. I can't even take it anymore...

[05/15, 09:44] Mk: Insert 60

.

I wake up the next morning and it looks like Khwezi didn't come to bed. I get up and make the bed then go take shower. When I come back Khwezi is packing. I dry myself, then lotion my body. I wear my royal blue below the knee bodycon dress with black heels. I fix my weave then apply lipstick. I look the part. My phone

rings and its my mom.

Me: hey.

Mom: hello angel. How are you?

Me: I'm great you?

Mom: great. Your dad and I were wondering if we could come through to the graduation.

Me: oh you're welcome to come.

Mom: I'll see you later then.

Me: sure.

I walk out and go have breakfast with my kids. They are still in their pjs so after breakfast Nondu bathes them. It's 9 and Khwezi is also dressed. I pick Lwethu up and we go to my car with Enzo following.

Khwezi: I thought we were using my car.

Me: well not anymore.

I get in the car and he gets in the front. I drive to daughters school and park. I take her inside

then we all go to the hall. I sit in between my mom and dad.

Dad: I guess you aren't taking this mission thing well.

Ok now at least I know he's really going on a mission and not spending time with Buhle.

Me: sort of.

The ceremony goes on with me taking pictures the whole time. I send a few to Siya. She's still his daughter and he has every right to his daughter. We have snacks then we leave the hall to our cars.

Dad: come Mbali.

I walk with him.

Me: if it's about your secret then it's safe with me.

He let's out a sigh.

Dad: yes and Khwezi too. He's trying to provide

for his family so please just let him go, it won't even be long.

Me: 2 months is a very long time.

Dad: it'll pass by like a week.

Me: I hope so.

We walk back to the others and I just have to act like we're happy.

Dad: Khwezi good luck.

Khwezi: thanks.

I hug them then we get in the car and Khwezi drives home.

Its just after 2.

Me: when are you leaving?

Khwezi: at 5.

I nod. We get home and I go to the bedroom and change.

Khwezi: I'm sorry. I'm sorry for everything I've

ever done to you. I didn't know that's how you feel about everything.

Me: oh.

Khwezi: I don't want to leave knowing we aren't on good terms.

Me: that won't stop you either way.

He holds my hands and looks at me. I don't even know how I feel. You know when that one person that made you get goosebumps when they hold you and now you have none of that. I just look at him and feel hurt.

Khwezi: I know you're tired Mbali, I'm tired of the fighting too but I promise when I get back the first thing we'll do is to fix our marriage.

He kisses my forehead and that reassures me that we are still in this together. I will not let the devil enter into my marriage ruining it like that. That's not how I was raised spiritually.

I am in my jeans, tank top and denim jacket.

Khwezi is in the study working while I'm in the lounge with the kids.

Enzo: when is daddy leaving?

Me: soon my angel.

She sulks.

Enzo: can Lwethu and I go spend time with him before he leaves?

I nod and they walk away. It's just Chuma and I. She's now heavily pregnant- 7 months.

Me: how's the pregnancy?

Chuma: yho its painful. I find it hard doing anything. Amanda wants me to move in.

I look at her and wonder whose idea it really is. Knowing Libo he probably convinced his mom.

Me: why?

Chuma: she wants to be there as a grandmother.

Me: did you tell your brother?

Chuma: no but I'll tell him before he leaves.

A car hoots and I know they're here to fetch Khwezi. He walks in the lounge with his bags, he takes everything outside then comes back and calls me to the kitchen. He pulls me in for a hug.

Khwezi: I want you to be safe always. I've put in extra security, but I want you to remember everything I've taught you. If anything happens be ready to defend both you and the family. I really love you okay?

I nod. He pulls away then kisses me.

He walks out and I watch as the car drives away. To be honest I'm scared and hurt at the same time.

I don't know but my emotions are taking over and I miss him already. It's going to be a long 2 months. I decide to go to bed. Maybe it'll make the time go by faster.

.

Its benn 2 weeks since Khwezi left. He skyped a couple of times to talk to both me and the kids but it wasn't for long though.

So it's a Tuesday and I'm out for lunch with Olwethu.

Olwethu: shame you must feel incomplete. And it's only the beginning.

Me: you've got no idea.

Olwethu: it'll get better.

My phone rings and it's Sfiso.

Me: Sifiso?

Sfiso: we need you to come to the warehouse. It's an emergency.

Me: which warehouse?

Sfiso: I'll send you the directions.

Me: ok.

He hangs up.

Me: uhm Lwethu I have to go. There's an emergency.

Olwethu: sure. I'll handle the bill.

I take my car keys and a message with the coordinates pops up. I put them on the GPS and drive to the place. I get there and Sfiso is outside. We walk in and boom theres Buhle on a bed and a doctor. My blood boils, I am angry.

Me: why am I here?

Sfiso: Khwezi said I should call you in case of emergencies and this is an emergency.

Dr: the baby is not growing in the womb. Chances of it or the mother surviving are very little.

I look at Buhle and pity her. She is in pain and tears are just flowing.

Me: so what now?

Dr: now you have to choose between the baby and the mother.

Buhle: where's Khwezi? He's supposed to be here and not you.

Me: please leave us.

They all walk out.

Me: see how shitty life can be? A few months ago you were having my husband and destroying me but now the tables are turned, you are on your death bed and I have the option of killing you...

Buhle: you wouldn't.

Me: You used to be me my best friend you should know me better. I'm not evil, I would never kill you or the baby.

We are both quiet now and I have all types of emotions. I decide to walk out and the doctor is by the door.

Dr: so what happens now?

Me: I don't know and at this point I pretty much don't care.

I walk to my car and just let it all out. I don't know why this keeps popping up in my life and now I have to decide what happens and I can't even choose...

[05/15, 09:44] Mk: Insert 61

.

I try to call Khwezi but he doesn't respond. I call him a couple of times and still nothing so I drive straight to Olwethu's place. See Olwethu might be the crazy ass that she is but deep down there is a heart. I buzz in and she opens. I park my car and walk inside. I run into her arms and she hugs me real tight.

Olwethu: what is it?

After some time she let's go and we go sit in the lounge. She has a really beautiful home.

Olwethu: talk to me.

Me: now that girl is dying and apparently Khwezi left me in charge and now I have to choose between her and the baby.

She let's out a sigh.

Olwethu: that's hard. But really now what happens when she dies and the baby is not his?

Me: exactly what I was thinking.

Olwethu: and if the baby is his you'll have to raise it. And you and I both know you don't want that. It'll be a constant reminder of what Buhle did.

To be honest I don't want this baby, I wouldn't be able to raise Buhle's child. It would have been better if I met Khwezi with a child already but now it's a totally different story.

Me: I know.

Olwethu: if I were you I'd let the baby go.

I let out a sigh. My phone rang and it was Khwezi. It's a bit too late but I answer anyway.

Khwezi: babe whats up?

Me: everything isn't right.

Olwethu walked out leaving me alone.

Khwezi: are the kids fine?

Me: yeah but one isn't.

Khwezi: which one?

Me: your unborn baby. Apparently it's growing out of the womb and both mother and child are at risk. Now a decision has to be made on who to save.

He lets out a sigh.

Khwezi: what do you say?

Me: I don't know. It might be your baby.

Khwezi: I love you ok? No matter what decision you make.

To think about it. Buhle was one of the few breadwinners at home and I couldn't let her die plus the baby is innocent but it'll create

problems for my marriage. Maybe terminating everything that'll lead back to this will be much better

Me: so what now?

Khwezi: you can't kill the baby though.

Me: Khwezi I don't like this at all. I'm the one who'll have to look after that baby. A baby that I don't even want.

Khwezi: But I accepted Enzo and loved her as my own.

Ok he did not just use Enzo to win argument. This is his fault, he was supposed to handle this but he chose to keep Buhle safe.

Me: excuse me? Don't you dare use Enzo. I had her before we met and you chose to stay with me even when you knew about her. I never forced you Khwezi and you were the one who asked us to move in with you. So don't you dare fight your battles with my daughter. And by the

way you can call the private doctor you hired for her, tell him what you think is best for your baby and baby mama.

I hung up before he could say anything. Khwezi is really getting to my last nerve. I never forced him to accept Enzo, I told him about my daughter the first day we went out and we weren't even in a relationship yet but he agreed to be in a relationship with me and even asked me to marry him knowing about my daughter.

Me: Olwethu!

She came rushing down the stairs.

Olwethu: what did he say?

I told her everything he said.

Olwethu: you'd swear these men grew up together. They are all so controlling.

Me: tell me about it.

Olwethu: tell you what? Let's go out tonight.

Me: on a Tuesday?

She nods then I leave to get ready. I get home and my kids are at the door.

Lwethu: mama!

I kiss Enzo then pick Lwethu up. He leans to kiss me.

Me: you're sweet, you know that.

He smiles.

Me: Nondu I'll be going out later.

Nondu: ok.

I switch my phone on and I have so many missed calls from the number Khwezi has been using and Sfiso. I won't return any of their calls.

So at 7 we had supper and I tucked my babies in. Went to take a shower then wore my black jeans, bra crop top with a jacket and my navy red bottom heels. I look stunning. I take a couple of pictures then post them.

Me: Nondu I'm leaving.

Nondu: I'll lock up.

I took the BMW X6. I went to fetch Olwethu.

Olwethu: Siba and Babes are coming.

I nod so I drive up to fetch them and lucky for us Babes is with a friend.

Babes: hey guys. Ok intro, Mbali this is my best friend Qhama. And vice versa.

She looks familiar. I'm sure I've seen her somewhere.

Me: nice to meet you. So where are we going.

Olwethu: Barkulcha.

Qhama: lets hit every club there is.

My phone rings and it's the husband.

Olwethu answeres.

Olwethu: Khwezi we are busy and Mbali doesn't want to talk to you.

She switches off my phone then I drive to our destination. Weird how we are out at night while we're all married, well except Siba.

We are inside and the vibe is there. I'm pulling out my best moves and the dj has been eyeing me.

Qhama: he's been looking at you for a very long time.

Me: I noticed.

Qhama: wanna be naughty a little.

We both giggle and go back to the others. Olwethu is drinking already.

Siba: I don't even know how I'm reporting for work drunk like this.

Me: and some of us are housewives.

Babes: the good life. Especially now that the husband's are away.

I think she's tipsy too. I decide to join them and

drink a bit. When I'm a bit tipsy we decide to go to the next club. It's the festive so the vibe is on another level. So we go from club to club till the morning. It's 8am and we are passed out in my car. The minute I wake up and laugh thinking of the fun we had.

I switch the radio on and Qhama and Siba wake up.

Me: oh my God how did we end up here?

Siba: where are we?

I laugh. I look around and it looks like the beach.

Qhama: I think we should drive home. My husband will be in my neck the whole week.

I laugh and my head hurts this time. I drive home and first take Qhama and Babes home. She's half asleep when she walks out. I drop Siba off then it's Olwethu. I wake her up and she groans.

Olwethu: where are we?

Me: your home.

Olwethu: what happened?

I try to remind her and she laughs. She walks in and I drive home. I park then walk inside through the lounge. I get sober immediately when I see Khwezi sitting on the single couch...

[05/15, 09:45] Mk: Insert 62

.

I want to greet but he looks too angry.

Me: hi

He just stares at me. I walk upstairs and to the bedroom then I call Olwethu and tell her. She is in stitches.

Me: don't laugh it's bad.

Olwethu: shame. And he's the only one that's back. You're in so much trouble.

Me: I know.

Olwethu: let him find you in his favourite

number.

Good idea.

Me: that's a good idea. I'll call you back.

I hang up. I decide to go take a shower, lotion myself then wear my black lingerie. Just as I'm about to sit and do my hair, Khwezi enters. His eyes roam my body.

Khwezi: Mbali what are you doing?

Me: what am I doing?

Khwezi: how dare you leave my kids and go clubbing?

Me: it was once. And why are you back?

Khwezi: can we talk about this later?

Olwethu is life, he was hard and for once didn't argue or shout.

He gets closer to me and I know he's going to show me flames.

He takes his suit and throws it aside.

I hold his neck and we kiss for dear life. We may have had our downs but I missed him. He immediately threw me on the bed and got on top of me.

Me: ha.a Khwezi, I have to be somewhere.

Khwezi: you can cancel.

Me: no.

He continues to kiss me and I pull away. I love teasing him and making him beg.

Khwezi: please.

His eyes were red, I just nodded and he pulled the lingerie off and went in. I regretted it same time because he was rough. I knew it was the anger inside him. He kept going deep till I felt him close to my abdomen. I kept moaning and screaming till we both came. He didn't pull out he just rested on top of me.

Khwezi: I missed you.

Me: me too.

We were both just breathing, lost in our own thoughts. He finally pulled out and I went to take a bath. I decided to wear my blue summer dress.

Khwezi: I'm going to the warehouse.

I nod. I am really tired of fighting with Khwezi, I don't even have the energy anymore.

Khwezi: I've decided that the baby goes.

I nod again but this time I feel a sense of relief.

Khwezi: come on Alu, I'm trying to fix things here.

Me: I know.

He walks over to kiss my cheek then he leaves. I follow him and walk to the lounge. I miss my dad, it's been a while since we've been together. So I take my kids and drive to his workplace. He's in a meeting so we wait. At 2 he's done so we walk in.

Me: daddy.

He smiles.

Dad: what a lovely surprise.

He comes over to hug me then the kids.

Me: I missed you.

Dad: I missed you too. But we've been busy. I heard Khwezi is back.

I nod.

Dad: Mbali you're making this boy weak. He can't keep coming home every time you don't see eye to eye.

Me: I didn't do anything. I just got back this morning and he was home.

Dad: you're stressing him.

Me: I'll be a good girl then.

He smiles. We catch up then I later go back home. It's weird how I've gotten so used to doing nothing. We get home and walk inside.

Khwezi: I'm taking you guys out for supper.

Enzo: yey.

Khwezi: can we go to the study.

I follow him and he closes the door behind him.

Khwezi: what do you want me to do Mbali, tell me what you want me to do in order for us to go back to what we were.

Me: it's going to take time.

Khwezi: ok. Buhle won't be trouble anymore.

Me: I hope so.

Khwezi: believe me. I'm sorry for everything that's happened these past few months. I didn't mean to hurt you like that.

Me: Khwezi it's fine. Let's just move on and forget about everything.

Khwezi: ok. Where were we?

He moves closer to me and picks me up to place me against the wall. We make love like it's the first time. When we are done we clean up

then go out for supper. I'm actually glad Buhle is out of the way now I can have my family back...

[05/15, 09:45] Mk: Insert 63

.

So I wake up on Thursday morning and I take a shower. I get out of the shower and Khwezi is on the phone so I decide to do my hair and not listen to the conversation. I blow dry my hair. He ends his call and looks at me.

Khwezi: you're up early.

Me: it's after 8

Khwezi: still early. So I just spoke to Aphiwe and she wants us to come over for the holidays. A week or 2.

Me: that's fine with me.

Khwezi: thank you. So we're leaving on Sunday.

I nod.

My phone rings and it's Buhle's mom. Ok this is

weird because she never calls unless it's an emergency.

Me: hello ma.

B'mom: hello. Are you busy?

Me: not really why?

B'mom: I was calling to inform that Buhle died last night.

I look at Khwezi and he looks calm.

Me: I'm so sorry to hear that.

B'mom: the police are still investigating.

Me: oh uhm can I call you later.

B' mom: sure.

I hang up and let out a breathe I didn't even know I was holding.

Khwezi: Buhle?

I nod.

Me: Khwezi why did you kill her?

Khwezi: what gives you the idea that I killed her?

Me: because you told me you handled her and now she's dead.

He looks calm.

Khwezi: I didn't kill her then. Trust me.

I know he did so I just decide not to argue any further. Its time I put this incident aside.

.

So on Sunday we are all packed and ready to go. Nondu is on holiday so it's just us four. We drive to the airport and board our plane to Cape Town. Khwezi and I are working on stuff so the tension is a bit better now. So we arrive at Cape Town and as usual we have our driver drop off a car for us.

Khwezi: wanna rest or go out?

Enzo: lets go out.

Me: I think resting is better.

We drive to Durbanville. And we are welcomed by a black Mercedes-Benz exiting.

Me: someone had it all this morning.

Khwezi looks at me very irritated. I don't know why he still treats his sisters like kids. I mean I'm younger than Aphiwe and here I am married to him with 2 kids.

She is frozen when she sees us because she is wearing a shirt, probably belonging to the guy.

She comes to the car and helps us take our bag to the bedrooms.

Aphiwe: is he angry?

Me: I think so.

We laugh.

Aphiwe: and I'm still walking around in his shirt.

Me: go change.

I walk back downstairs and the family is there.

Me: should I make breakfast?

Khwezi: yeah.

I walk to the kitchen and start cooking. Aphiwe walks in. She helps me here and there and I serve everyone.

Aphiwe: so Claudia and dad will be joining us for Christmas.

Me: what about Chuma?

Khwezi: your brother is keeping her.

Me: so tell me about this guy of yours?

She looks at me and I try not to laugh.

Khwezi: doesn't he have morals. What type of guy does what he did?

Me: I don't see anything wrong with what he did.

Aphiwe: well he works with me. He's a surgeon.

Me: that's interesting. How did you meet?

Aphiwe: we went to varsity together then met again at work and thats when it all happened?

Khwezi: how long has it been?

Aphiwe: 5 months now.

I smile. But by the looks of things Khwezi is not impressed. He's never impressed. I fear for our kids.

.

So the holiday went well. We spent Christmas in Cape Town and Khwezi and Aphiwe finally accepted Claudia which was great. I hated seeing my father in law lonely.

.

So it's the following year in February and Chuma gave birth to a baby girl and they named her Sibahle Jessica Ngoma. I had just received the news so I was going to visit her during lunch. I wake up at 9 which is a bit unusual and I am suouer exhausted. I take a long shower then wear my black tights and tank top. I gwt downstairs and Lwethu runs to me.

Lwethu: baba?

Me: baby?

Lwethu: hallo.

I smile, hug and kiss him.

I walk to the kitchen and my breakfast is ready.

Nondu: we're out of sausages.

I nod and eat.

Me: what did you do to the egg. It tastes weird.

Nondu: I always prepare it like that.

Me: mhh thanks. I'm ok.

I take my car keys and drive to Vincent to have breakfast. I seriously couldn't eat those so I headed to Spur and had something else. After my breakfast, I drive to the hospital but before I even get there there are gun shots. I convince myself I'm hearing things but I feel my car slow down then I'm taken and thrown into this van. I scream and kick but there is no one to help me...

[05/15, 09:46] Mk: Insert 64

.

I was thrown into a car and later blindfolded. I screamed and kicked and later realised there is no use. The car finally came to a stop and I was again carried and thrown on top of a bed then tied up and unfolded. There were 2 guys in front of me. Both dressed in black.

Me: what am I doing here?

Guy1: our boss wants to meet you.

Me: and whose your boss?

Guy2: you'll meet him soon.

I was scared, I have never thought I'd be kidnapped one day.

Guy1: your husband is looking for you.

Me: is this about him?

The one guy nods and I suddenly feel like crying. I don't know what they are going to do to me.

They blindfold me again then they walk out. I cry and scream but realise it won't help because no one can hear me.

I am woken up by a slap against my face, I hit the wall. Tears just stream down my face. I'm unblindfolded again and theres food in front of me.

Guy1: eat.

I shake my head. I'm starving but I don't know what they did to the food.

Guy1: I know you are starving, eat. You have a long journey tomorrow.

Me: where to?

Guy1: the boss is exchanging you for some goods. You're being sold to some drug lord in Columbia.

I scream and cry louder. I am even feeling light headed from crying and this guy is just staring at me.

I look at the tray in front of me and there's a knife. I pause a little.

Me: can you get me water.

He walks out and locks the door. I shift to take the knife and try to cut the rope. It's thick so I struggle a bit but when I hear foot steps I'm done. I grab the plate stand behind the door. When he opens I hit him with the plate and he falls to the ground. I grab the knife and stab him countless times. I take his phone and gun then walk out. I'm sure there are a few more guys outside so I get prepared to fight. The second guy is by the door facing the opposite direction. Without even thinking twice I shot him in the head and he fell to the ground. I ran out of the house. The place looked deserted and it was dark outside so I had no option but to go back inside and look for car keys. I know this is a bad idea and they might track me but I have no option. I dial Khwezi's number and he answers immediately.

Khwezi: tell me you have something for me?

Me: baby? I need your hel....

Khwezi: where are you?

Me: I don't know but I'm using their car and they might locate me.

Khwezi: just try to get to a main road. I'll try and locate you.

Me: ok. Please don't hang up.

He lets out a sigh.

Khwezi: ok.

He makes a three way call to Sfiso and a few minutes later he has found where I am.

Khwezi: I need you to stop the car and get out. I'm on my way.

I nod as if he can see me and I don't dare hang up. I pull up and wait outside. It's a bit chilly. It's after 9 already. After what seems like forever a car pulls up and I hide. The driver flashes the

lights.

Khwezi: its me.

I get out of my hiding place and go to the car, he is standing outside and I immediately hug him real tight and let out a sob.

Khwezi: I'm sorry but you safe now.

We walk to the car and he drives back to our home.

Khwezi: I think we should go to the hospital.

Me: why?

Khwezi: I don't know what they did to you.

He drives to the hospital and I'm taken in. They run tests while I sleep. I wake up to Khwezi staring at me.

Khwezi: I don't know what I would have done if I lost you.

Me: you didn't lose me.

Khwezi: I have good news by the way. We're

pregnant.

He smiles. I don't know but I'm not so excited.

Khwezi: we'll have the scan just before we leave.

I nod and we finally go do this scan. I am emotional for some weird reason and it's weird how I never noticed.

Dr: more interesting news is that it's two and not just one but two.

I smile. It's only now that everything is coming back to me.

We get a few scans then she cleans me up and I am discharged.

When we get home a few cars are parked outside. We walk in and my parents and step mom are here. Anda, Zim, Spokes and Olwethu.

Mom: oh my baby are you ok?

She squeezes me.

Me: yeah.

Dad: have you found who did this?

Khwezi: they're still working on it.

Dad: it's been more than 12 hours.

Me: relax dad.

Olwethu: I heard you saved your ass. Yazi girl, you need to give me lessons.

Olwethu always manages to bring life to any dull moment.

I giggle.

Me: we'll talk. I'm hungry.

I look at Khwezi.

Amanda: I'll go make something for you.

She walks out. I sit down. I eat while we chat then they leave.

Khwezi: I'll go to the warehouse later.

I shake my head.

Me: please don't leave me.

He lets out a sigh.

Khwezi: ok I won't leave. Let's to bed.

We walk upstairs and Enzo and Lwethu join us in bed...

Her heart- My story

Summary

.

After the whole kidnapping incident I never drove again. It scared me too much. I had to get a driver.

After the whole incident our relationship somehow got strong. I don't even know how that happened. It's weird because I always thought nothing could break us apart but now everything seems more perfect.

The day the twins came to the world was the worst. I swear I'm never giving birth again after

this. So it was Spring, September. My driver and I were at the beach. Khwezi doesn't even want us to be close but I do need company after all.

James: don't you want ice cream?

I nod.

James: just get in the car while I go buy.

After 10 minutes or so I start to lose it. I had cramps the previous day but I just thought it was one of Braxton Hicks.

He comes back and I try to smile. I enjoy my ice cream on the benches and when I get up my water breaks. I panic.

James: oh my God. What happens now?

Me: get me to the car and call Khwezi.

He does as I instruct him and we rush to Beacon Bay Hospital. I'm already sweating and breathing heavily. When we get there Khwezi opens the door and he smiles. I am not even in the mood to smile. They help carry me out and

I'm told to wait. It's like these kids inside me are fighting to go out. I scream, Khwezi tries to calm me down while I walk around. I bend hoping it'll go away but it kept getting worse. It was only in the evening that my first princess came to the world and the second followed shortly afterwards. My cookies felt like it was on fire. Being pregnant was the last thing on my mind from that day forward. Lesedi and Naledi Ngoma. My babies looked beautiful.

Khwezi: wow their so pretty.

Me: I know.

Khwezi: I only shoot doubles. So if ever you're pregnant and it's not twins I'll know.

I laugh.

Me: it's never happening again. I doubt I'm ever having sex again.

He laughs.

Khwezi: niw thats nkt happening.

We laugh. Our families finally come to visit us.

.

It's very strange how a lot has happened in 3 years. I met Khwezi, got pregnant, got married and got pregnant again. I never even thought I'd be ready for marriage. But when it happened I grabbed it with both hands only hopping for the best. It was obviously a difficult journey especially being married to the man I'm married to. Khwezi can be such a nuisance, he can be so controlling which irritates me but we get through that too.